

THE
S C H O O L
O F
W O M A N:

Or, MEMOIRS of
CONSTANTIA.

Address'd to the
Duchess of * * * * *

By the A U T H O R
O F T H E
S C H O O L of M A N,
A M O R A L W O R K:

Suppress'd at *Paris*, by Order of the King of
FRANCE.

Translated from the F R E N C H.

L O N D O N:

Printed for J. ROBINSON, in *Ludgate-Street*,
MDCCCLIII.

3 CHOL

W O M A N :

OF MEMOIRS OF

COMSTANTIA

Attributed to the



BY THE

OF THE

SCHOOL OF M A N

A MORAL WORK :

Translated and Edited by Order of the King of

FRANCE.

Translated from the French.

L O N D O N :

Printed for J. Robinson, in Langbath Street,

MDCCLXII.



THE
S C H O O L
O F
W O M A N.

P A R T I.

 HERE are Minds, we find by Experience, Madam, capable of resisting the Charm that seduces almost all Mankind. Prejudice, that Rule of so many Judgments, has no Power over you, and in spite of Appearances you have believed that a Woman, under close Confinement, might be less guilty than she appeared to be ; you have even condescended to recollect, that I have already had the Benefit of
B your

your Support on other Occasions, the Remembrance of which will be always dear to me. However, on the Testimony my Superior has given to my Conduct, you have been pleased to promise me your Protection, on Condition that I can justify myself from the Suspicions which my Confinement has raised against me. This Condition will, I dare say, turn to my Advantage, since I shall advance nothing without putting it at the same Time in your Power to prove by unexceptionable Testimonies.

The History which by your Orders I shall relate, will convince you, Madam, that you never perhaps had so just an Occasion for following the Emotions of that Compassion for the Unhappy, which has made you search for them even in Prisons. You will here see a young Person disinherited, even before she was born, abandoned to herself, and led into Temptations and Snâres by the very Persons who ought to have been her Defence. What Ideas do these Reflections call to my Remembrance! They make me more than ever perceive the full Extent of my Obligations; while the Interest you take in my Misfortunes obliges me to make use of the greatest Frankness, and to write with a Sincerity that will oblige me to
relate

relate whatever may appear most to my Disadvantage. After this, can I flatter myself with appearing to you as innocent? Will your Virtue pardon the Sensibility of my Heart? Alas! if nothing in your Opinion is capable of excusing this Weakness, I must from henceforward consider myself as unworthy of your Goodness; however, I feel my Courage revive, when I reflect that the Persons who are most severe with respect to themselves, are the most indulgent to others; and from hence I begin my Justification with the greater Confidence.

But scarcely do I take up my Pen, when I perceive that it is ready to drop from my Fingers: All my Misfortunes spring from Irregularity of Conduct in my Father and Mother. I cannot write without mentioning Things injurious to them, and the Respect I owe them imposes Silence on me; but the Necessity of justifying myself, and the Obligation I owe to Truth, obliges me to overcome my Repugnance. I shall not write a Word to their Disadvantage, without being before-hand filled with Confusion: and here, Madam, you may assure yourself that my Self-love will be much less affected than my Heart.

My Father has been twice married. During his first Marriage he discovered a Taste for the Study of Philosophy ; the Expences with which it was attended began to involve him in Difficulties, and the Folly of desiring to penetrate into the Secrets of Nature not only injured his Fortune, but rendered him at the same Time unfit for performing the Duty of a Place, the principal Revenue of which depended on the Labour of the Possessor.

His first Wife bore him only one Daughter, whose Birth occasioned the Death of her Mother. He hoped that a new Marriage would re-establish his Affairs ; but his past Conduct prevented his finding an advantageous Match among Persons of his own Rank. His difficulties, added to the Desire of gratifying his ruling Passion, made him therefore seek for a rich Wife of a Station inferior to his own ; and lest his Daughter should be an Obstacle to his Project, he married her to the first Person who offered to become his Son-in-law. He was recommended to a young Lady, whose Mother hoped one Day to be the Wife of the Farmer-General, who till that Time had been only her Protector : And the Fortune that was promised her,

her, defacing whatever was defective with regard to her Birth, my Father proposed to marry her.

My Grandfather, who was still living, disapproved this Marriage, and threatened to disinherit his Son, if he persisted in his Resolution ; but his Injunctions were without Effect ; their Nuptials were celebrated, and my Father was disinherited. Was it possible for such a Union to prove happy ? All the Children that were to spring from this Alliance were to be involved in the same Disgrace ; however, as I was their only Child, I alone was the Victim.

The Expences of the Family were soon much larger than my Mother's Fortune was able to support ; a great Part of her Portion was employed, as usual, in purchasing Jewels, new Furniture and Cloaths. They were in hopes that my Father, by the Credit of the Farmer-General, would obtain the Post of Sub-Farmer ; but he was as unfit for soliciting his Advancement, as he was incapable of managing Business : The Care of his Insects, his Vegetables, and Machines, took up all his Leisure. He never took the least Concern about my Mo-

ther's Actions, or my Education; when he was in the midst of his Furnaces, he forgot that he had a House to manage, a Wife to love, and a Daughter to educate.

I shall not determine whether it was his Indifference to my Mother that made her go in search of foreign Amusements; but it is certain that she gave herself up to Pleasure, with a Vivacity that hurt her Reputation. And indeed a young Woman is generally guilty of Imprudence, when a Husband is either too inattentive, or wants the Resolution to regulate her Conduct.

The Care of Dress and of dissipating her Mind by Diversions, alone employed her Thoughts; and as nobody took the least Concern about our domestic Affairs, they were soon in such a Disorder as could not be concealed. This my Father never perceived till his Eyes were opened by his wanting a Sum necessary to enable him to perform some Experiments in Electricity, which he himself had projected, and from which he expected to produce miraculous Effects. This Obstacle put him out of Humour, and he made some Remonstrances to his Wife on the Care she ought to

to take of his Family ; but she imagining that her Indifference about an Affair of such Moment was sufficiently justified, by her Husband's Example, replied in a disdainful Tone, " Do
 " you imagine then that I am more fit than you
 " to trouble myself about such trifling Mat-
 " ters ? I have Servants who are entrusted with
 " these Things, and it is your Business to look
 " after them ; or if that does not please you,
 " you are at Liberty to take this Trouble upon
 " yourself. Whatever happens, Sir, my Fa-
 " ther won't disinherit me ; he is rich, he'll re-
 " pair every thing, and therefore I have no Oc-
 " casion to trouble myself about Futurity."

But unhappily for us, this Father, on whom she so confidently relied, died of an Apoplexy, at the very Moment when he designed to re-establish our Affairs ; and his Family giving a very moderate Pension to his pretended Widow, obliged her, as the Condition of her enjoying it, to retire into a Convent, where she soon after died.

Our Creditors, who had been appeased by the Hopes the Farmer-General had given them, began as soon as he was dead to be exceeding clamorous ; and at the Head of these was my

Sister's Husband, who laid claim to his Wife's Portion. After having for some time struggled against them, all we had was seized upon, and not the least Hope left of our being able to recover any thing again: My Father was now obliged to disappear, in order to preserve his Liberty; for however unconcerned he was in other Respects, he was not such a Philosopher as to regard Captivity as an imaginary Evil; when my Mother retired to the House of one of her Friends.

As I was scarce ten Years of Age, I was hardly capable of perceiving the full Extent of my Misfortune: My Vanity was however extremely shocked, at seeing that I had no Servants to wait upon me. Disinherited by my Grandfather, and abandoned by my Sister, who only endeavoured to take Advantage of our Misfortunes, I should have continued without any Relief, if Mrs. *de Lys*, a Relation of my Father's first Wife, had not generously offered me her Assistance. She had always discovered an Affection for me; and seeing that I had no Fortune, she resolved at least to procure for me a proper Education. With this Design she sent me to a Convent in *Provence*, taking upon herself the Charge of paying for my Board

Board and Cloaths. While I was there, her Sister, who was a Religious in the same House, conceived a Friendship for me. She was treated by the rest of the Nuns with a very great Respect, which she owed perhaps less to her Piety, than to the Sweetness of her Temper and the Accomplishments of her Mind ; Perfections which she possessed in an eminent Degree : The Experience she had acquired in the World, before she had consecrated herself to the Service of her Creator, gave her a judicious and clear Understanding, rarely to be found in a Convent.

This worthy Person resolved to take a particular Care of my Education ; and she was so far from making me lose my Time in those frivolous Employments, in which the first Years of Youth are generally spent, that she applied herself to the forming of my Judgment and the Regulation of my Passions. I had seldom any other Company besides her's, and she knew how to render that agreeable. In the midst of Amusements, she spoke the Language of Reason and good-Sense ; but her insinuating Behaviour, and the Friendship she threw into all her Discourse, softened and rendered agreeable what might have appeared too

grave and serious for a Child. Thus she turned into Instruction what appeared to have the least Relation to it.

Mrs. *de Lys* accustomed me very early to read to her ; and as she at first presented me with such Works of Entertainment as were adapted to amuse the Imagination, without endangering the Morals, she insensibly led me to approve of Books of greater Solidity, and even those of Piety, by chusing such as were free from the little low Conceits which a false Zeal sometimes intermixes with the sublime Doctrines of Religion. By frequently telling me that I was capable of Reason, that I had a good Heart, and a Mind already tolerably cultivated, she had the Art to make me believe that I owed to myself those Sentiments and wise Resolutions with which she knew how to inspire me. By this Means my Self-love became interested in my Endeavours to merit her Praises and Esteem : Thus I was rendered sedate at an Age in which we are generally permitted to be thoughtless and trifling.

As my Circumstances were not unknown to her, this was the Subject of many of our Conversations, and the Motive that made her carefully

fully avoid suffering me to contract that Spirit of Idleness that accompanies into the World almost all the Girls educated in a Convent.

“ You are not rich, said she; and a Girl without a Fortune seldom meets with a suitable Establishment. My Sister does not design to educate you in the Manner you would have been brought up, if your Parents had not dissipated their Wealth; her Circumstances will not allow her to repair the Injury they have done you; but her Intention is to give you, when you leave this Place, what will be sufficient to enable you to learn a Trade. You ought therefore to accustom yourself betimes to work, since you see that this is all you have to trust to. I am not ignorant, that if the Men of the World heard me make use of this Language, they would consider my Advice as base and ignoble; but you would greatly perplex them, were you to desire them to point out any other honest Means of avoiding Indigence: Don’t therefore imagine, that being born to a State of Ease and Affluence, you are only made to employ yourself to no Purpose. If you knew, my dear Child, how many Women this false Delicacy, this ill-placed Pride, has ruined, you would be terrified at the Thought. I

take

“ take particular Care to avoid giving you
 “ what is called a polite Education. Another
 “ would have made you hope for an Estab-
 “ lishment, by making you acquire agreeable
 “ Talents, by inspiring you with a Desire of
 “ reaping great Advantages from your Person :
 “ Vain Illusions of Pride ! These Councils are
 “ always dangerous, and frequently become
 “ fatal to those who follow them. The good,
 “ the true Education, is that which is suitable
 “ to our Circumstances, and to that State we
 “ ought to embrace ; every other is only fit to
 “ inspire you with Vanity, to give you chime-
 “ rical Pretensions, a Dislike to the Station in
 “ which you will be placed, and Contempt for
 “ your Parents, or for a Husband, who can
 “ only offer you a moderate Fortune. Such
 “ would have been virtuous in Marriage, who
 “ often, through Vanity, prefer a vicious
 “ Life, attended with greater Splendour. From
 “ whence do these Irregularities almost always
 “ proceed ? From an Education by which the
 “ Head has been filled with false Ideas of
 “ Luxury and of Pleasure ; that has only added
 “ to their Attractions, by giving them the
 “ Arts of Allurement ; that has made them
 “ aspire to keep Company with those who are
 “ too much above their Station, and caused
 “ them

“ them look with Contempt on those to which
 “ the Unhappiness of their Situation ought to
 “ confine them. Therefore, my Dear, if you
 “ propose never to abandon the virtuous Senti-
 “ timents you have entertained, employ your-
 “ self about whatever will fit you for that Pro-
 “ fession which you ought to embrace. You
 “ have told me that you should like to be a Mil-
 “ liner, rather than any other Business. I know
 “ that this Trade is under some Discredit, and
 “ that the World in general has not too good
 “ an Opinion of those who practise it. But
 “ which is the Profession exercised by Women,
 “ that is not the But of public Malice ? These
 “ Inconveniences ought not to discourage you ;
 “ your own good Conduct will make you ob-
 “ served by every body, and at last procure
 “ you that Reputation which cannot fail of
 “ being the Fruit of it. In a Word, the
 “ Station of a Tradeswoman can never be
 “ dishonourable ; and that of a Girl who for-
 “ gets herself so far as to despise Work, will
 “ always be so. Remember then that you are
 “ not to aspire after Accomplishments which
 “ cannot fail of proving fatal to a Person with-
 “ out Wealth. You ought not, however, to
 “ neglect your Voice ; for that is an Advan-
 “ tage which you derive from Nature ; and my
 “ Sister

“ Sister consents that you continue to improve
 “ it.”

Such was the Advice I received from this worthy Nun. I saw her possessed of the greatest Happiness : Nothing could disturb the Serenity of her Mind, or the Equality of her Temper. I sometimes imparted to her the Desire she inspired me with of consecrating myself to God ; on which she replied, that as my Parents were unable to pay for my Admission, I ought to preserve myself from a Fervor that was perhaps indiscreet, and know the World before I renounced it. “ All who are shut up here,
 “ said she, think it a very different Place from
 “ what it is : Proper Vocations are formed
 “ amidst the Disorders that reign there See it,
 “ Child, said she, but let it be always under
 “ the Eye of my Sister, and be constantly on
 “ your Guard against the Example and Per-
 “ suasions of your Mother, who hitherto, I am
 “ sorry to say it, has behaved in such a Man-
 “ ner, as to make me tremble for your Morals,
 “ if ever your Conduct should be intrusted to
 “ her. I am the more afraid on account of your
 “ Tendernefs for her. How many wicked
 “ Mothers are there who sacrifice the Hap-
 “ piness of their Daughters, by leading them
 “ into

“ into the same crooked Paths in which they
 “ have wandered ; and who endeavour to make
 “ their Advantage of it ? Banish, O Heaven !
 “ banish from our Minds such dreadful Ideas,
 “ and never suffer my Fears to be justified by
 “ the Event.”

I had for four Years enjoyed my Salary from
 Mrs. *de Lys*, and the Benefit of her Sister's
 Advice, when Death deprived me of my Bene-
 factress. I then perceived all the fatal Conse-
 quences of this Misfortune. I was soon obliged
 to think of removing from a Convent, where
 no body would pay for my Board, and of leav-
 ing that tender Friend to whom I had such es-
 sential Obligations. With how many Tears
 was the Idea of our Separation attended !
 What a Description did she give of the Dangers
 with which I was going to be surrounded, of
 the Artifices Men would employ to surprize the
 Heedlessness of Youth, the Credulity of Inno-
 cence, and the Simplicity of a Mind unac-
 quainted with the World, and void of Expe-
 rience ! What a Picture did she give me of the
 Irregularities into which Love plunges us, and
 the Shame and Despair that are its inevitable
 Consequences ! How happy should I have been, if
 the Impression her Discourses then made upon
 me

me had always remained ! I left her, or rather they tore me from her Arms, with my Heart filled with Grief, Esteem, and Gratitude.

I was fourteen when I returned to my Father's House. My Parents were re-united ; but alas ! by what Means ! One of my Mother's Friends had settled their Affairs ; and both, by a kind of Agreement, followed their own Inclinations. My Mother was filled with Gratitude for him who had obliged them, and my Father comforted himself for every thing by the Pleasures of Study, which were the only ones of which he was capable. I immediately perceived their want of Conduct. Tho' I would willingly have taken no Notice of my Mother's Gallantries, they were mentioned to me by the Servants ; who never fail to inform the Children of what is most to the Disadvantage of their Masters. I, however, frequently imposed Silence on them, and could not persuade myself that a Woman, who discovered in her Conversation the most refined Sentiments, and the most perfect Tranquillity of Mind, could in reality be so very culpable.

From whence, said I to myself, proceeds this scrupulous Attention which she would have me pay

pay to my own Behaviour ; this continual Care to preserve me from all Company that may fully the Purity of my Soul ; these pressing Exhortations to fulfil even the smallest Duties of Religion ; can all this be only Hypocrisy, a regular, well-supported Lie ? Are such Mothers as are themselves involved in Vice, the most severe with respect to their Daughters ? Is the President who lodges with us, and who, I am told, is the Protector of the Family, the Person who covers it with Shame, while my Father suffers what is so injurious to him ? I was then ignorant that nothing is so common as these Kinds of Settlements ; but with what Surprise did I afterwards see that such shameful, such ignominious Proceedings, are in a Manner authorised by Custom, and considered only as Trifles to which very little Attention is paid.

These Reflections frequently rendered me dull and melancholy ; and one Day, when I was more than ordinary oppress'd by them, I retired into my Chamber, that I might the more conveniently indulge the Uneasiness they gave me. My Mother, who loved me too tenderly to suffer me to be out of her Sight, had perceived when I left her, that I was more uneasy than common ; and therefore followed me to
know

know the Reason of my being so long alone. On her drawing near the Door she heard me sigh, and saw that I held my Handkerchief to my Face, in the Posture of a Person deeply afflicted. She was filled with Uneasiness: Some Words, interrupted by Sighs, still increased her Fears; she entered without making any Noise, and after a Moment's Silence she heard me pronounce with a firm Voice, "Yes, I
 " will follow the first Inspirations that Heaven has given me; the Cloister is the only
 " Shelter for Innocence and Virtue; and it
 " was doubtless to determine me the more readily to give myself up to God, that he permitted me to be the Witness of such Crimes."

Scarce had I finished these Words, when I found myself tenderly pressed in my Mother's Arms. "Ah, my dear Child! said she, in an
 " affectionate Tone, What has the most tender Mother done to make you desire to leave
 " her? What Reason have you to be uneasy?
 " Are you not sensible how much I love you,
 " and what must be my Surprise to see you
 " afflict yourself in this Manner, without my
 " knowing the Cause? You have no Confidence in me!"

I gave her a Look of Tendernefs: Candour was painted on her Countenance: I embraced her: She preffed me to tell her the Cause of my Tears: I durst not inform her: And as I only made ufe of trifling Evasions, ſhe threatened me with her Anger. Her Uneafinefs, however, ſeemed to ſubſide, when I ventured to tell her, that I had taken up a Reſolution to retire from the World; where I ſaw Perſons, whom I had believed to be the moſt virtuous, behave in a Manner very inconſiſtent with their Duty. This Answer made her ſeem a little thoughtful: When we are ſenſible of our having deſerved Blame, we always imagine that what we hear has a Relation to our own Situation. I imagined that ſhe then turned her Thoughts upon herſelf; I ſaw her Eyes grow moiſt; ſhe ſighed: My Looks, which were full of Tendernefs and Pity, ſeemed to expreſs my Concern, to requeſt her Confidence, and to let her know that I was worthy to learn from herſelf the Reaſons that had induced her to plunge into a Crime, for which I believed ſhe groaned in ſecret. But ſhe was doubtleſs hindered by my Youth from opening her Mind to me.

“ If

“ If that is the Motive of your Vocation,
 “ said she at last, you have been to blame to
 “ take such a rash and precipitate Resolution.
 “ Your Sentiments, your Education, and my
 “ Advice, ought to secure you from such Dan-
 “ gers. There are Women void of Reproach
 “ in this very World, where you imagine that
 “ there is so general a Depravation. You are
 “ not ignorant of the Misfortunes that have
 “ happened to us: Do you believe that Vice
 “ has not come more than once, with his Purse
 “ in his Hand, to tempt my Virtue? How
 “ many Women would have accepted of Assist-
 “ ance, tho’ a Mind well born will always be
 “ shocked at the Motive. But you, Child,
 “ will never find yourself under such Extremi-
 “ ties: I know the Danger too well not to pre-
 “ serve you from it with the utmost Care.”

I had still in all their Purity those Sentiments,
 which will admit neither of a Medium nor a
 Limitation, with regard to the Respect which
 a Woman owes to herself, and that which she
 at the same Time owes to Truth. I could not
 therefore hinder myself from condemning the
 little Sincerity she discovered in what she had
 said. I should have been better pleased had not
 my Mother cited her own Example: But from

a Motive of Respect, I contented myself with adding, " Suffer me to ask, What are the
 " Means you propose to make use of, to enable
 " me to avoid the Dangers we are speaking of?
 " For my Part, the only Resource I can see, is
 " my being put out Apprentice, that I may
 " one Day procure by my Industry the Necessaries of Life, and preserve myself from the
 " Necessity of receiving Obligations, which
 " cannot be offered me without a criminal Motive."

" How do you dare to mention such a Thing,
 " cried she, with a Look of Indignation? My
 " Daughter an Apprentice! My Daughter a
 " Workwoman! Who could inspire you with
 " such low Sentiments? The very Idea of it
 " makes me blush."

" I have no Design to embrace a dishonourable Profession, I replied; there are many
 " Trades in which a Woman may, without
 " Shame, be employed; and I should prefer the
 " Station of a Shopkeeper to that of a Chambermaid; for in the State to which our Fortune
 " is reduced, I have no other Choice to make."

I saw in my Mother's Eyes, that she was as much surprized at seeing me capable of these Reflections, as stung with Grief at her having contributed by her Conduct to expose me to this cruel Alternative. I should have afflicted her too much, had I pushed it any farther at that Time. Her Tears began to flow; I threw my Arms about her Neck, and told her, that I hoped from her Tenderness that she would find an advantageous Expedient for procuring me an Establishment.

I have frequently asked myself, why Parents indulge such Pride, as to be ashamed of seeing their Children in a State inferior to their own, without having the Courage to perform for the same Children, what would procure them the Means of preventing their Blushes. Are there not Fathers, who carry this fantastical Humour so far, as to sacrifice their Happiness, and expose the Honour of their Families, to avoid this Kind of Humiliation? These Men are as vain as they are indolent. How many Girls are lost to Society, exposed during their whole Lives to the natural Frailty of the Sex, and destined from their Birth never to extend their Views beyond themselves, because the Portion their Fathers are able to give them, is not sufficient

cient to place them in such a Situation as would flatter the Vanity of their Parents! We see them perish with Vexation, grow old in the inner Rooms of their Houses, and that in a Manner frequently burthensome to their Families, and always painful to themselves; while, if they had been employed in Trade, or had married Persons inferior to their Fathers, they might have lived in a Manner agreeable to themselves, useful to their Families, and advantageous to the State. But these are Truths adopted by no body, for Pride condemns them.

I could not persuade myself that my Mother had voluntarily entered into the Course of Life in which I found her. Persuaded that the Prefident had taken Advantage of her Distress, in order to force her to a Compliance, I considered him as, in a Manner, the sole Author of the Errors she had Reason to reproach herself with: Scarce could I avoid discovering the Aversion I felt for him. As soon as he appeared, I had always my Reasons ready to offer for my retiring. My Mother at first attributed this Behaviour to the natural Timidity of my Age and Sex; it appeared however that she sometimes guessed the true Motive, and I saw that it grieved her. It was, doubtless, these Suspicions that made her
 conceive
 take

take an extraordinary Care to avoid strengthening my Conjectures. She even deceived me to such a Degree, as sometimes to tempt me to believe that the President conferred Favours upon us, without her having any Reason to reproach herself; and I became apprehensive that I had entertained a rash Judgment of her. But I was not long under this Uncertainty; the Imprudence they were guilty of, gave me a too certain Knowledge of this afflicting Truth; and this determined me to think more seriously than ever of taking my final Resolution. I sometime examined whether it would be more advantageous for me to learn some Trade, or to enter into a Cloister; and when I reflected on the Impossibility my Parents were under of paying the necessary Expences, I abandoned myself to Despair. The only Consolation I received was that I obtained from Mrs. *de Lys*. Her Letters were always filled with that Tenderness, that was necessary to give them full Power over my Mind, and to support me under all my Uneasiness.

In the mean time, the Alteration in my Health and Temper became remarkable: This filled my Mother with continual Fears; but the Loss of my Beauty, which was the Consequence

sequence of my Melancholy, affected me much less than the ill-timed Jest I was obliged to suffer. She who was the Cause of my Sadness, could frame no Idea of the Cause, from the Coldness with which I, for the most Part, received her Caresses. She imagined that I was too fond of Dress; and I confess, that, on any other Occasion, she would not have been deceived. The President resolved to make me a Present of a Gown, and Suit of Linen, finer and more elegant than those I had hitherto worn; but I refused both, telling him I would receive nothing from any body except my Parents. He then insisted on my Acceptance of them, but I infused such Haughtiness into my Refusal, that he left off pressing me. My Mother smartly reprimanded me on this Occasion; when I replied, that I would submit to Injustice from my Mother; but nothing should oblige me to receive Presents from such a Hand. I pronounced, without the least Precaution, these last Words in a Manner that left no Doubt of my being informed of Things, of which she would have been glad to have had me always ignorant. She ordered me to explain what I meant, and expressly declared that she would know it. But the Manner in which I defended myself, made her comprehend that I durst not come to a clearer Explication. “ You have,

“ doubtless, said she, in an angry and disdain-
 “ ful Tone, heard some ridiculous Story of the
 “ President.” She then entered into a Num-
 ber of Circumstances to dissuade me from giv-
 ing any Credit to what I might have heard.
 But as I had gained my Knowledge of the Truth
 from what I myself had seen, I knew how to
 set a proper Value on all the Turns she made
 use of to lead me into an Error.

“ No, Madam, said I, softening my Voice,
 “ no body has deceived me. I have too much
 “ Respect for you to believe, on slight Grounds,
 “ Things of this Consequence. Pardon me,
 “ if I know more than you desire I should.
 “ You may depend on my Discretion. It does
 “ not become me to criticise on your Conduct :
 “ On the contrary, it is my Duty to conceal it
 “ from all the World ; and it was with this De-
 “ sign that I begged with such Earnestness that
 “ you would dismiss your Servants, who ruin
 “ you by their Indiscretions. I will serve you
 “ myself. My Affection for you will render
 “ this Employment both pleasing and honour-
 “ able, and this Regulation may remove the
 “ Suspicions of the Public : It is known that
 “ we are not rich : The Air of Opulence you
 “ give to your Situation, will always render
 “ your Conduct suspected. You may even
 “ take

“ take another Resolution, that appears to me to
 “ be still more convenient ; I have not yet dared
 “ to communicate my Sentiments of it to you ;
 “ and suffer me to tell you, that you ought not
 “ to form a Judgment of them from your past
 “ Fortune and former Splendor, but from the
 “ Necessity you are under to regulate your Af-
 “ fairs, and to do this by such Means as will be
 “ the least injurious to your Reputation. The
 “ President has a Friendship for you ; and as
 “ he is rich, cannot you reap the Advantage
 “ from it, of placing yourself in a firm and se-
 “ cure Situation ? Can you think it beneath
 “ you to enter into Partnership with some
 “ Tradeswoman, by his advancing a Sum which
 “ she might improve to your Advantage ? I will
 “ live with her, perform your Part of the Busi-
 “ ness, and watch over your Concerns. This
 “ Expedient, tho’ it may make you imagine
 “ that I have not a proper Elevation of Soul, is,
 “ in my Opinion, the most reasonable : It ap-
 “ pears to me to be necessary, and if I am not
 “ deceived, it is the only Method of prevent-
 “ ing your always depending on the Caprice of
 “ a Man who may cease to have the same Sen-
 “ timents for you ; your Situation will be re-
 “ putable, and Appearances will no longer be
 “ against you.”

While I spoke, my Mother looked at me with a Complacency and Tendernefs, that let me fee ſhe was greatly moved ; and when I had concluded, ſhe embraced me in a Transport of Affection, crying, “ Is it a Girl of fifteen who
 “ holds ſuch Diſcourſe to her Mother ? No, it
 “ is the Voice of Reaſon and good Senſe uttered by your Lips. Yes, this very Night I
 “ will mention to the Preſident the Part you
 “ adviſe me to take. I have made many Reflections on what you ſaid to me laſt. Trade
 “ is in reality the moſt reputable and honeſt
 “ Reſource we can find ; and I would have
 “ you preſent at the Converſation we ſhall have
 “ on this Subject.”

I aſſiſted at it indeed, but I had the Grief to find that the Preſident did not reliſh my Project : He objected to me my Father’s ill Conduct : which he ſaid would injure our Credit ; and declared plainly enough, that he thought my Mother incapable of managing any Buſineſs ; but all this did not diſcourage me : I took upon myſelf the Conduct of the Enterprize ; my Zeal made me believe every thing poſſible ; and I aſſured them, that if they would ſuffer me to act, they ſhould be ſatiſfied with my Conduct. My Mother, who frequently acquieſced in what I had ſaid, ſeemed as fully perſuaded as I myſelf was of the Succeſs of my Promiſes :

Promises : But no Arguments could gain the President's Approbation. " Your Proposal, " said he, is really a childish Project ; and it is " nothing but your Inexperience that makes " you think the Execution of it so easy : For " my Part, I shall not suffer myself to be drawn " away by the Charms of Novelty. You can " do nothing without a Sum of Money ; and " I declare that I shall not be so imprudent as " to trust you with it. What can be the " Meaning of all this, added he, in a reproachful Tone ? Do you complain, Madam, of " the Situation in which I have placed you ? Is " it not more agreeable to enjoy a State of " Ease, without Anxiety and Trouble, than " to go and deliberately involve yourself in " Cares that would become disagreeable a Day " or two after you had engaged in them ? Were " you ever designed to appear behind a Counter ? Am I in a Station that will permit my " going to see you in such a Place ? I find that " your Design is to keep at a Distance from me, " and perhaps to leave me entirely. This is the " Reward of my Affection for you : I did not " imagine that I loved a Person capable of such " Ingratitude."

My Mother could not support this Reproach :
However little Foundation there was for the

Complaints he made her, she was satisfied with the Justice of the President's Reasons; and to make him forget a Proposal which she saw had displeased him, she added, looking at me, that those who were not satisfied with her Conduct, might take their own Measures. I felt all the Severity of this Reply, and therefore retired, to give Way to a Grief that arose from the Apprehensions of what I should suffer in the State I was in, and from which I despaired of making my Escape.

My Mother had a female Friend, kept by a Collector of the Revenues, whom she had hitherto forbid my going to see, without her accompanying me: But since our last Conversation, her Prohibitions were less severe: She did not take the Precaution she had hitherto done, to conceal from me her Behaviour towards the President; and I even heard her one Day tell him, that the Way to tame my Virtue, (which was grown troublesome to them) was to get me acquainted with some body capable of conquering the Aversion I had always shewn against the Sentiments with which they were willing to inspire me. In saying this she had other Views, that had a Relation to herself; but I could not at that Time penetrate into them. "If we
 " could find out, added she, a Person capable of
 " discharging

“ discharging the Duties of some Post, we would
 “ marry her, and then we should get rid of
 “ her.” The President eagerly laid hold of this
 Proposal; for he had wished to get me out of
 the House ever since he found that my Mother
 sometimes yielded to my Advice.

I examined this Resolution no farther than as
 it concerned me; I was still ignorant of my
 Mother's other Designs, and the whole of her
 Conduct made me think, that she was desirous
 of preventing her blushing before me, by mak-
 ing me like herself. People always imagine, that
 they have justified the Irregularity of their own
 Conduct, in the Opinion of those whom they
 have brought to act like themselves. In fact,
 she obliged me to dress in a much genteeler
 Manner than I had ever been used to. She,
 with much Art, taught me the Refinements
 of Coquetry, pointed out how I should put on
 the most striking Airs, and frequently insisted
 on my being dressed by her Woman. She would
 sometimes come to surprize me in a Morning,
 and then her Caresses and Praises were never
 exhausted. Though this seemed to flatter my
 Pride, I did not dissemble how much I thought
 such Proceedings contrary to Decency. If I
 appeared in a Mantulet, or a Handkerchief
 about my Neck, she did not fail to attack me

upon it, and even to take it away; at the same Time asking, Whether, if she was dress'd in the same Manner, she should not appear as if she had been buried. Mrs. *de la Chaise*, who was the female Friend just mentioned, grew dearer to her than ever, from the Necessity of improving the least of my Advantages.—But perhaps I am as guilty as they in recalling to mind such Circumstances; I already reproach myself for having too long fixed my Attention upon these Things; but I thought them necessary; they discover the Artifices that were put in Practice to inflame my Senses, when they had lost the Hopes of corrupting my Heart.

Tho' I had an invincible Aversion to the Things to which they would accustom me, I could not refuse to submit to them, in Compliance with the Friendship which Mrs. *de la Chaise* expressed for me; and whatever Cause of Complaint she has given me by her Conduct, I shall never forget the Services she has rendered me. To prove to her that I regarded her as a real Relation, I sometimes called her my Aunt, a Custom authorized by the Familiarity in which we lived; but which carries along with it the Air of a Citizen, which the Rules of Politeness, without doubt, condemn.

I sometimes saw a young Man at her House, who assiduously paid his Court to my Mother ; they made me believe that this was the Method, when a Person would obtain the Daughter in Marriage, and my Penetration went no farther. This Discovery flattered my Vanity, without having any Effect on my Heart : My Manner of thinking, and the Gravity of my Temper, did not lead me to be fond of the Men ; they appeared to me to be incapable of Sincerity, and a true Attachment.

The President had a Nephew, a Counsellor in Parliament, who was acquainted with my Aunt ; but he seldom came to see her, since my Mother, whom he had disoblighd, forbid him her House, where he had lived with his Uncle. I had never yet seen him ; but by the Praises I heard of him, I perceived that he was the only sensible Person that came to see her ; and I already distinguished him from other Men, even before I knew him : Had I not reason to fear that to this Esteem, which was in some Measure premature, there would one Day be added more tender Sentiment ? These Dispositions however, probably, only arose from my Aunt's having informed me, that on the

favourable Things she had said of me, he had often wish'd to see me.

Young *Durval*, whom they had given me as my future Husband, was not long before he paid us a Visit. The President, doubtless, thought him very amiable, because he wished that he should be so; and I had orders from my Mother to receive him with Politeness. I would have informed her, that I did not feel the least Inclination for him, but she ordered me to be silent, with much Sharpness and Severity; and at the same Time let me know, that it was my Duty to obey her. Ought I to reveal the Motives of these Orders?—I am forced to it, by my Promise to write without Dissimulation or Disguise. They were intended to conceal an Intrigue that I was very far from suspecting. My Mother was grown passionately fond of *Durval*; which I should for a long Time have been ignorant of, if the Imprudence which always accompanies Love, had not soon given me an Opportunity of being informed of this Truth. I began to see with less Surprize the Irregularity of her Conduct, which, as it grew more familiar to me, gave me less Astonishment than Affliction. I had imagined, that the highest Point of Shame and Disgrace in a Woman, was the selling her Person, and her Favours;

Favours ; but I saw that there was still a Degree beyond this, the purchasing, at the same Time, the Favours of another Man ; and indeed, I cannot mention it without blushing, that my Mother gave with one Hand, what she received with the other : It is then a certain Truth, that a Woman, however she may gloss over her Faults in her own Mind, never knows to what Lengths her first criminal Indulgences will carry her. *Durval* was a disbanded Officer of Foot, and therefore regarded the Mistress of a rich Man as a Prey that Fortune had put in his Power.

My Self-love was extremely shocked at my having been the Dupe of their Artifice, and the poor Tool they made use of to serve as a Pretence for their guilty Commerce. I could not see, without Pain, the Sincerity with which the President strove to oblige those who so cruelly deceived him ; whatever Prejudice I had before conceived against him, I could not avoid seeing that he made use of all his Credit to procure *Durval* a Post that would enable him to place me in a happy Situation ; and from thence forwards I began to treat him with less Reserve. At last he obtained for *Durval* an agreeable Post in *Provence*, with the Hope of a speedy Advancement ; and this News threw my
Mother

Mother into the utmost Consternation. It was necessary to find a specious Pretence for preventing my pretended Lover's marrying me, and his removal. They resolved therefore to have recourse to me, to help them out of this Extremity, by telling the President that I would not leave *Paris*. I said so indeed before him, but added, that I was astonished that they should give him such trouble on my Account, when from the very first Day I had declared to my Mother, that I felt an Aversion for him they had proposed to me, and that this Aversion was strengthened by the Certainty of the Looseness of his Morals; so that I could not see what had been his Motive for continuing his Visits, which were generally concluded without his speaking to me, or even desiring to see me.

I was not enough Mistress of myself to avoid shewing this little Resentment. My Mother was extremely offended at it, and her Passion carried her so far that she gave me a Box on the Ear; at the same Time demanding, if I intended to insinuate, that *Durval* had paid his Visits to her. But this Impulse of Passion betrayed her and opened the President's Eyes; who insisted, that since he disturbed the Peace of the Family, he should be ordered not to continue

tinue his Visits. My Mother pretended that this Prohibition was too injurious for her to agree to it. Thus we frequently imagine that we justify ourselves, by encreasing the Suspicion of our being guilty of the Faults, of which we are sensible that we are justly accused ; and her Obstinacy was carried so far, that she openly declared that she would break with the President, rather than obey him. The whole Weight of the Quarrel fell upon me, and I paid dearly for indulging this Impulse of Revenge.

I was from this Day so frequently exposed to suffer by my Mother's Humours, that the House became insupportable to me. I went to make my Complaints to Mrs. *de la Chaise*, whom I found with the President's Nephew. He perceived the Embarrassment his Presence gave me ; and no sooner did so, than he strove to remove it. His Discourse was sprightly and respectful, his Behaviour decent, with all that Ease that distinguishes a Person used to the best Company. Their Conversation turned on the Disturbances *Durval* had caused in our Family ; but what was my Astonishment, when I heard my Aunt tell him, with the utmost Frankness, that she thought my Mother less in fault than the President.

Mrs.

Mrs. *de la Chaise* has an excellent Heart, but she is very imprudent, and sometimes, without Thought, gives way to the Sentiment which the present Situation inspires. She has besides the Weakness of frequently suiting her Discourse to the Taste of those who hear her, at the Hazard of injuring her best Friends, and even of betraying her own Secrets. How many Men are there who resemble her! Her pretended Zeal made her proceed so far as to make her tell him, that it would be the President's Fault if my Mother lost him; that he was too weak; but that if he had shewn more Firmness, he would have met with more Respect.

“ Permit me, Madam, said Mr. *de Maison-*
 “ *court*, to differ a little from your Opinion.
 “ I imagine that my Uncle behaves as well as
 “ it is possible for him to do on the like Occa-
 “ sion. Has he not threatened to leave them?
 “ If he persists in his Resolution, he will punish
 “ himself more than your Friend. With ano-
 “ ther Person his Uneasiness would be of a
 “ different Kind. Mrs. *de Vermont's* Inclination
 “ for *Durval* may soon be ended; and it is
 “ not improbable but that his Ingratitude will
 “ cure her. Now the President is rich, and
 “ without Children: He will for some time
 “ find

“ find the Means of obliging her, and such
 “ Generosity will produce a Reconciliation.
 “ As to *Durval*, he is sufficiently unhappy in
 “ having betrayed his Benefactor; he loses, by
 “ this Means, the Hope of ever being united to
 “ the Person most capable of contributing to
 “ his Felicity.” In pronouncing these Words
 Mr. *de Maisencourt* fixed his Eyes on me,
 and then rejoined: “ How could he deceive
 “ himself so strangely, when he had the Choice
 “ between the Mother and the Daughter? Why
 “ am not I permitted to declare my Senti-
 “ ments? In what a different Manner should I
 “ have acted! ’Tis true my Discernment
 “ would have cost me my Repose; I should
 “ have found a Resistance, which it does not
 “ appear that he ever met with; but I don’t
 “ know how it is, we sometimes chuse to be
 “ treated ill by one Woman, rather than to
 “ be favoured by another.”

“ In Reality, returned my Aunt, very much
 “ satisfied with the little Inclination he ex-
 “ press’d for my Mother’s Charms; I can’t
 “ conceive what Satisfaction he can find with
 “ the silent Mrs. *de Vermont*. I love her most
 “ heartily; but I can’t help saying that she is
 “ very tiresome: You can’t imagine, added
 “ she, with a compassionate Air, how much
 “ she

“ she has broke for some time past. Within
 “ another Year the poor Woman will be
 “ scarcely tolerable. In spite of all this, added
 “ she, interrupting herself, I am very glad of
 “ an Opportunity of telling you, that I have
 “ not the least faith in the Maxims you have
 “ been laying down. Really it is in vain for
 “ you to pretend to all this Delicacy before me.
 “ You all of you, Sir, love easy Conquests,
 “ and the least Resistance soon tires you, let
 “ the Woman be ever so handsome.”

“ You are probably speaking, returned Mr.
 “ *de Maisencourt*, of those who find nothing in
 “ the Object of their Care capable of recom-
 “ pencing them for the Favours that are re-
 “ fused them ; I don’t know whether, when
 “ that is the Case, it is our Fault or yours :
 “ The Men can only attach themselves to the
 “ Advantages you set the greatest Value upon ;
 “ and you will agree with me, that most Wo-
 “ men offer nothing to our Attention but what
 “ makes us wish to free ourselves from the
 “ Power of their Charms. But if to the most
 “ engaging Figure, pursued he, casting at me a
 “ Glance which he seemed to endeavour to
 “ conceal from my Aunt’s Eyes, and even
 “ from mine, there should be added, a sincere
 “ Heart, an improved Mind, and especially
 “ that

" that seducing Candor, which bespeaks the
 " Nobleness of the Soul, - we shall find in the
 " Charms of their Conversation, what will be
 " sufficient to fix us to them, without our
 " being obliged to strive with such Eagerness
 " for Pleasures, from which they know how
 " to divert our Attention."

Mr. *de Maisencourt*, on concluding, seemed
 to search in my Eyes for his Pardon; for having
 made me perceive, that he took me for the
 Model he proposed. He was not ignorant,
 how much Confusion he must have given a
 Person so unacquainted with the World as I was,
 if he had bluntly address'd his Praises to me :
 Therefore what he added in the rest of the
 Conversation, was accompanied with all the
 Delicacy imaginable; so that my Aunt did not
 suspect that he said any thing that had the least
 Relation to me. But the more Address and
 Delicacy I perceived in his Manner of treating
 me, the more sensible I was to the Praises he
 gave me. I could not help letting him see be-
 fore I went away, (in a Manner very awkward,
 no doubt, but which had not perhaps the less
 Charms in his Eyes) that the Regard he had
 shewn for me did not pass unnoticed. His
 Praises, though indirect, flattered my Self-love
 so much the more, as I had formed the highest
 Idea

Idea of him, and the Sentiments he had discovered in relation to my Mother, of whom he had great Reason to complain, served only to increase my Esteem for him.

However, accustomed as I had been from my Infancy to Reflection, I soon asked myself, why I became more attentive to the Judgment Men formed of me, and more sensible of the Desire of pleasing them? When I compared the Elegance of my Dress, and the enlivened, though modest Gaiety of my outward Appearance, with the Simplicity I had at first adopted, I could not help being convinced that ill Example, if it does not suddenly corrupt a Heart impress'd with the Love of Virtue, at least insensibly tarnishes its Purity. How many little coquetish Actions did I suffer myself to be guilty of, and thought them entirely innocent, tho' I should always have regarded them as forbidden, if I had lived amongst Persons who behaved with greater Regularity. I believed myself mighty wise, because I was not as guilty as those with whom I daily conversed. Do we not always measure our Innocence by comparing it with the Disorders that surround us? Coquetry is an Evil gained by Contagion: I found it by Experience, and did not conceal from myself the Progress it might make, if I continued to breathe an Air
so

so unhealthful to Virtue; but what possible Means had I of saving myself from this Danger? The only Person I was acquainted with was Mrs. *de la Chaise*, who was but little capable of giving me the Advice and the Example I had need of. To whom then could I address myself, in order to change my Situation in a Way conformable to my Manner of Thinking? My Grandfather would not acknowledge me. He had not even permitted my being presented to him. I was the Fruit of a Marriage which he had condemned; and my Sister, and he whom she had married, endeavoured to keep up in his Mind Dispositions so fatal to me; I was therefore very far from having any room to hope for the least Assistance from any one in the Family. The only Part I had then to take, was to search for the Means of leaving a House that became every Day more disagreeable, and which covered me with Shame: Would the World imagine that the Daughter of a vicious Woman had the Resolution to resist the Contagion of her bad Example?

I imagined that I was drawing near the End of my Uneasiness, when my Mother one Day informed me that she had found a Milliner who would learn me her Business, and take me immediately to her House, on Condition of my putting

putting a thousand Crowns into Trade. “ You
 “ must, added she, apply to the President for
 “ this Sum ; for I can assure you, you have an
 “ absolute Power over him.”

Whatever Aversion I felt to this Step, I determined to ask him to lend it me, and propose to give him my Note. This I imagined would give less Meanness to my Proposal ; however, it gave me the Boldness I wanted. The President immediately made such Enquiries about the Milliner as Prudence required, and promised me the thousand Crowns without a Note, that would be of no Service to him, especially as he was very willing to part with it, in order to procure me a comfortable Maintenance. This Sum he put into my Hands, as he was setting out for one of his Country Seats near *Paris*, where he was going to pass some time. “ I
 “ trust it with you, said he, with the most
 “ obliging Air, notwithstanding your Youth,
 “ and am well persuaded that you will have
 “ the Prudence to make a good Use of it.
 “ I wish, added he, embracing me with an
 “ engaging Cordiality, that you may meet
 “ with as much Prosperity as you deserve ; and
 “ you may be perfectly persuaded, that while
 “ you preserve your present Sentiments, you will
 “ always

“ always find me ready to contribute to your
 “ Happiness.”

I was duly sensible of such a noble Proceeding ; and my Mother congratulated me, in very warm Terms, on the Success of my Negotiation. I knew that she had, unknown to the President, created some importunate Creditors, and proposed her taking what was necessary to deliver her from the frequent Visits they made her : But she affected a great Indifference about it, and proposed that my Father should take me the Day before I was to leave them to perform a Vow, she said, she had made when I was sick ; and in this Expedition we were to set out in the Morning, and to return at Night. My Father, after having bantered her on the Delicacy of her Conscience, resolved to comply with her Request, from the Hopes of gathering a few Plants which he wanted for some chemical Operations : And she also persuaded him to take with him the President's Porter and House-keeper, who had been left to take care of his Effects : None of us were able to penetrate into her Design ; and, without the least Suspicion, I put my Money in my Box and set out.

At our Return from this Excursion, a Neighbour gave us the Keys of the House, telling us
 that

that she had Orders to let us know that my Mother was gone to *Chaillot*, in order to live there while the President stay'd in the Country, and that with this View she had ordered the Goods to be removed. We had then a Suspicion, tho' a very confused one, of a Part of the Truth; but in entering our Apartment, we found it stripped of all the Moveables, except my Father's Chamber, where my Mother had been pleased to leave him a Bed. The Porter and House-keeper behaved like People distracted, and were under mortal Apprehensions, that every thing intrusted to their Care had been carried off; but upon Examination, they, to their great Joy, found their Mistake, and that every thing was left in its former Situation. - This, however, did not prevent their resolving to apply to Justice, under Pretence, that the Effects taken away by my Mother had been given her by their Master. I was in the utmost Consternation. My Father flew from me; and on his Return told me that the Damage was not so very great, since they had taken nothing away from his Laboratory, and had left him his Cake of Wax, his Glass Globe, and Electrical Bar.

I made use of my Prayers and Tears, to prevail on the President's Domesticks not to make the Affair public; and not being able to succeed,

ceed, I propos'd their going with me to Mr. *de Maisencourt's*; for as he was their Master's Nephew, he was the only Person proper to direct them what Course they ought to take; and to this they at last consented. Whatever Apprehensions I entertained of his Resentment against my Mother, I had the highest Hopes from his Generosity. It seems as if Souls, cast in a particular Mold, divine each others Sentiments, and act from a reciprocal Confidence, which the Event always justifies.

“ I come, said I, as soon as I could speak to
 “ him, I come to put my Fate into your
 “ Hands.” My Grief prevented my proceeding: He, with the greatest Earnestness, desired me to sit down; and protested before hand, that he was ready to do all that lay in his Power to comfort me. His Generosity inspired me with Confidence: I inform'd him of the Cause of my Visit: For while I was telling my Story, if I cast my Eyes on his, I always found in them, what was sufficient to encourage me to proceed.

As soon as I had concluded what I had to tell him, he replied in the most affecting Manner,
 “ I am surprized, I am even sorry, that you
 “ have apprehended my shewing any Resent-
 “ ment against your Mother; I love my Un-
 “ cle

“ cle too well to do any thing capable of dis-
 “ pleasing him : I respect him in the Person for
 “ whom he interests himself, and what Reason
 “ soever I may have to complain of her, I will
 “ not suffer the least Step to be taken injurious
 “ to Mrs. *de Vermont*. If I seemed displeased at
 “ his Choice, it was because I imagined the
 “ Person who was the Object of it, incapable
 “ of the Return he deserves ; and the Event has
 “ but too well justified my Apprehensions. Per-
 “ haps the President will not be pleased at learn-
 “ ing from me what has pass’d. Do you, Miss,
 “ take upon yourself the Task of informing him
 “ of it. But write to him in a Manner least
 “ capable of shocking him. His declining
 “ Health, and Fondness for her who has be-
 “ tray’d him, require this Management. Let
 “ him know, if you think proper, how I have
 “ behaved in the Affair. I desire this not so
 “ much to make a Merit of it, as to convince
 “ him that I have not the least Prejudice against
 “ Mrs. *de Vermont*. As to the rest, added he,
 “ don’t regard the Threatenings they have made.
 “ Your Mother was Mistress of the Effects she
 “ took away ; and nobody has a Right to in-
 “ quire how she came by them. Therefore,
 “ tho’ my Uncle or I should be desirous of re-
 “ claiming them, we should have no Right to
 “ do it.” In this Manner did he endeavour to

lessen the Merit of the Services he had rendered me. " What appears the most criminal in this
 " Event, continued he, with a sorrowful Air,
 " is, that your Mother could be so unnatural
 " as to abandon a Daughter worthy of a better
 " Fate ; whose Merit and Understanding, I am
 " now convinced, surpasses even her personal
 " Charms."

I cannot express all the Emotions with which my Mind was agitated. I could no longer lift up my Eyes on Mr. *de Maisencourt*, after the Praises he had just given me. But my Situation happily justified the Embarrassment I was under for a Reply. I promised to write the same Night to the President ; he gave the necessary Orders to those who had accompanied me, and I went away, after having assured him of my Gratitude.

I would have taken up my Residence with Mrs. *de la Chaise* ; but when I had related to her what had just happened, she appeared very uncertain whether she should give me shelter. This, however, ought not to have surprized me. I well knew that she valued herself on a singular Delicacy in her Manner of acting ; that she treated Trifles as Matters of vast Importance, and would always find great Difficulties in the

most simple and innocent Things. It is certain, that in my present Situation there was no Medium between receiving me, and exposing me to the Impossibility of finding a Retreat for that Night. She therefore made long Examinations to know whether my Father, my Mother, and *Durval*, would have no Objection to her assisting me; and if she should not expose herself to any Inconvenience by doing it. In short, to remove this Difficulty, she sent to my Brother-in-law, to know if he would receive me. His Wife and he sent back such an Answer as she had Reason to expect. My Sister was born of another Mother; and that, in her Esteem, was sufficient to justify her Coldness with respect to me. This Indifference had been carried so far as to make her constantly refuse to see me; so that I did not yet know either the Husband or the Wife. However, the Severity of her Answer immediately determined my Aunt; she was resolved to assist me, from the only Reason that could render it odious; that is, she granted me from Humour, what I had been unable to obtain from her Generosity.

It is easy to imagine in what Agitations I must spend the Night: I was still in the most dreadful Uncertainty as to my Fate, when *Durval* came

came the next Day to let me know where I should find my Mother, and to bring her Orders for my going to her. She could not certainly have chose a Messenger more disagreeable to me. I could not help reproaching him for the Crimes into which he had drawn her; but he went away without deigning to answer me.

I found my Mother busily employed in putting her new Abode in order. " Well, Miss, said she on seeing me, you shall be satisfied : " My Conduct shall never more offend you : " I have broke, you see, the Engagements that " bound me to a Man, whose Obligations in " your wise Opinion dishonoured me; and " the Money he gave you will contribute to " make us live in a Manner conformable to " your Desires. I don't doubt but you have " began to blame the Step I have just taken ; " but I could not possibly break my Chains any " other Way. As to the rest, I don't think " myself obliged to give an Account of my " Actions to any body ; and I hope that if this " does not find Favour in your Eyes, you will " be so good as to spare the Reflections which " you ought to know will be of no Manner of " Service."

She must have imagined me entirely void of Common-Sense, had she hoped to convince me by these Reasons. But as my Representations would have been absolutely useless, I forbore to make her any : She besides express'd so much Friendship for me, that she smoothed my Brow, without my knowing how to help it. I have always felt the greatest Tenderness for her, and her Crimes have never been able to stifle these Sentiments.

We at first lived quietly enough ; when *Durval* came home, I, as often as I could, retired to my Chamber. It would be in vain for me to deny, that the Idea of Mr. *de Maisencourt* generally filled my Mind ; I yet only thought of doing justice to his Merit, in order to admire his Generosity ; and yet I doubtless already loved him ; but this Situation was so new to me, that I was very far from believing that Love could receive its Birth in the midst of Grief and Trouble.

Durval and my Mother behaved at first with sufficient Reserve ; but they soon, without Precaution, delivered themselves up to their Passion : They did not even conceal from me, for whom the Apartment next to ours was reserved.

reserved. This Conduct afflicted me in such a Manner, that I went to the Milliner, with whom I was to have entered into Partnership; and instantly desired her to take me for my work, chusing rather to become the lowest Girl in her Shop, than to suffer the Grief I felt at being a Witness to what rendered the House insupportable to me. She received me with great Coolness; but her Husband gave me more Hopes, and promised me that I should have the first Place that was vacant.

I did not imagine that my Situation could become more disagreeable; however I soon found by Experience that it might be so. *Durval*, who reigned with a despotic Power over my Mother's Mind, resolved to become jealous of her Affection to me. He knew me to be capable of giving her good Advice, and for this Reason he employed the lowest Artifices to root out of her Mind all Regard for me. His Ill-will was not confined to doing me unkind Offices in secret; he did not take the least Precaution in his Behaviour with respect to me: In short, he one Day carried Things to such a Height, as to require from me the Services and Obedience that he would scarce have demanded from a Domestic. I confess that my Resentment was carried to the Height. He presumed

to strike me, and I forgot myself so far as to seize a Book which happened to be within my Reach, and hold it in a threatening Posture: He made some Motions to stop my Arm: My Mother, at the Noise we made, came running to know what was the Matter, informed herself of the Quarrel, and sided with my Adversary: She even declared that she intended I should have the same Respect for him as for her, and ordered me to beg his Pardon. This Injustice made me more than ever sensible of the full Extent of my Misfortune. *Durval* protested that he would not lie another Night in the House, if he did not receive the Reparation which he believed to be his Due, and left it with an Air of Resentment. He knew that this was taking my Mother by her weak Side: She ran after him, made him come in again; came to me, and throwing herself on her Knees, entreated me with Tears, not to render her Life unhappy, but to make this Sacrifice for her who had given me so many Proofs of her Tendernefs, and that *Durval's* Heart was so valuable in her Eyes, that the Loss of it was sufficient to shorten her Days.

I considered with Terror and Amazement to what an Excess of Blindness we are capable of being conducted by a strong Passion. I was as
much

much astonished as softened by the excessive Grief of my Mother ; and when I found myself bedewed with her Tears, and saw her plunged in Despair, I was ready to yield to her Entreaties. But when I cast my Eyes on *Durval*, who, while she was in the utmost Distress on his Account, was whistling an Air, and viewing himself in an affected Manner in the Glass, I felt a greater Inclination to abuse him, than to make him my Excuses ; and I do not know how this Scene would have ended, if Mrs. *de la Chaise* had not entered. I have already said that she is compassionate ; but it is always when she does not believe her Vanity too much interested in shewing a contrary Sentiment : She is giddy and sprightly ; has an excellent Heart ; but very often wants Common-Sense : She is, in a Word, a fantastical Compound of Sensibility and Indifference to the Misfortunes of others : With a particular Talent for reconciling Differences, which she does not indeed produce so properly by the Goodness of her Understanding, as by the Frankness and the Zeal she expresses. Mrs. *de la Chaise* wept with my Mother, and let her know that she was in the Right ; talked sententiously to me, and told me that I was not absolutely in the wrong ; abused *Durval*, praised his Figure, his Voice, his Taste, and embraced him. In short, she said so many pleasant

Things that we were obliged to laugh and be reconciled.

I took upon myself the Task of waiting on my Aunt, with a Design to speak to her of my Situation ; but I had scarce begun to relate the Cause of the Vexation I had suffered, when Mr. *de Maisencourt* sent in his Name. On perceiving him my Heart fluttered, I blushed, and could not look at him without great Diffidence. It is very probable that my Confusion would not have escaped his Notice, if he had not given me Time to recover myself, by addressing himself first to the Mistress of the House ; while I, on my Side, thought I could perceive that his seeing me gave him some Emotion.

“ Well, Sir, said Mrs. *de la Chaise*, Mrs.
 “ *de Vermont*’s false Step seems to have recon-
 “ ciled you to your Uncle : He has sent for
 “ you ; you have been at his Country Seat :
 “ What has he resolved upon as to the Fate of
 “ our Friend ? I found him, he replied, in a
 “ violent Rage : His extravagant Behaviour let
 “ me see what an Affection he still preserves
 “ for her. I suffered the first Emotions of his
 “ Resentment to subside, and when I saw him
 “ grow a little more tranquil, I said every
 “ thing in favour of Mrs. *de Vermont* that I
 “ thought

“ thought capable of moving him. He had
 “ already obtained Orders for her Confinement ;
 “ but on my Arguments against it, he was
 “ very willing to grant a Revocation, which
 “ I immediately sent to the Commissary ap-
 “ pointed to execute them.” Mrs. *de la Chaise*
 extolled his Generosity in very high Terms,
 and concluded with frankly telling him, that
 she should not have been sorry if they had shut
 up my Mother for some Months, to learn her
 how to behave herself in a better Manner. I
 durst not express the Indignation this Sentiment
 inspired me with.

“ You ought to be less surprized at my Con-
 “ duct, said Mr. *de Maisencourt* : I should have
 “ been more unhappy than Mrs. *de Vermont* if
 “ the least Accident had happened to her : I am
 “ not ignorant, added he, giving me a most
 “ tender Look, that she has a Daughter worthy
 “ of Esteem, who would have been filled with
 “ Consternation at her Mother’s Misfortune ;
 “ and I should have thought I had been guilty
 “ of a Crime had I not exempted her from such
 “ cruel Uneasiness.” I looked at him, and
 bowed, as an Expression of my Gratitude ; but
 the Colour that came into my Face at that In-
 stant gave him a much better Proof of it.

“ My Uncle, in vain, told me, continued
 “ Mr. *de Maisencourt*, without seeming to
 “ perceive my Trouble, that if he had been
 “ inclined to believe her for whom I pleaded
 “ with such Earnestness, he should have de-
 “ prived me of his Inheritance. She has not
 “ made me lose your Esteem, I replied; and
 “ therefore I have nothing to reproach her with:
 “ On the contrary, she has procured me the
 “ Opportunity of letting you know, that no-
 “ thing shall ever be able to diminish my Re-
 “ spect for you; and for this I owe her my
 “ Gratitude.”

What did I feel while he spoke thus? I ad-
 mired the Nobleness of his Sentiments. A
 virtuous Mind would perhaps never become sen-
 sible of Love, if Love did not make use of Vir-
 tue in order to effect it! How inferior did all
 other Men appear to him who was the Object
 of my Admiration! I could not have imagined
 any one capable of such Generosity: But what
 a sudden Revolution was made in my Sen-
 timents by the Discourse which followed what I
 had just heard!

“ Do you know, said my Aunt bluntly, that
 “ I am quite amazed to hear you say, that this
 “ Child

“ Child is in all Respects worthy of Esteem.

“ How like the Men ! What Deceit are you

“ capable of ! Don't I know that you glory in

“ despising all Women, without exception ?”

At this Instant Mr. *de Maisencourt's* Eyes and mine met, and we both blush'd. “ You are

“ then embarrassed, continued she, at finding

“ yourself unmasked before one, whose Cre-

“ dulity you would perhaps surprize by Flat-

“ tery, though you don't believe one Word of

“ what you say.”

“ They must know nothing of the World,

“ replied he, smiling, who can entertain such

“ a false Idea of Women. I know what they

“ can never be upbraided with.”—“ Oh ! that

“ is doubtless with their being old and ugly,

“ added Mrs. *de la Chaise*, bursting into a

“ Laugh ; for Age and Ugliness are the only

“ Virtues you will condescend to grant us.

“ Come, don't dissemble now, because you are

“ before a Person, for whom, if I am not

“ mistaken, you have a kind of Inclination.”

At these Words I felt my Uneasiness increase,

and I durst not so much as lift up my Eyes on

him who caused it. “ You tell her, as others

“ do, continued Mrs. *de la Chaise*, that she is

“ wise ; but truly that is only because her

“ Senses have not yet informed her that she is

“ made for Love: She has wanted Opportu-
 “ nities, or has never yet been attacked by a
 “ Man that was agreeable to her. Now con-
 “ fess ; is not this the plain Sense of what you
 “ have said a hundred Times ? Don’t you add,
 “ as soon as you meet with Resistance from a
 “ Woman whom you have attacked, that you
 “ ought to conclude, not that she is wise,
 “ but that she has taken another into her good
 “ Graces, and reserved her Virtue to be ex-
 “ ercised against you, and that then you must
 “ wait patiently till it comes to your Turn ?

“ Indeed, Madam, said he, a little discon-
 “ certed ; Miss must consider me as a Monster,
 “ if you persist in degrading me in this Manner.
 “ You ought to draw no Consequences from
 “ what I have formerly said, only to awaken
 “ your Zeal ; from my knowing the Heat with
 “ which you would take upon yourself the De-
 “ fence of your Sex ; but do me the Justice to
 “ believe that these Paradoxes did not spring
 “ from my Heart. I have always considered
 “ Women as”——Dear Sir, cried my Aunt,
 “ interrupting him, People do not maintain a
 “ Subject with such Obstinacy, without having
 “ some Foundation for it in their own Opi-
 “ nions ; but the Information we have received
 “ of

“ of your Life and Manners has informed us,
 “ that they are mighty regular, and that the
 “ President *Dorbier*’s Lady is intrusted with
 “ the Care of preserving you from violating the
 “ Rights of our Sex.”

Though I could not comprehend what Mrs. *de la Chaise* meant, I could not avoid seeing clearly that Mr. *de Maisencourt* had a Connection with some Woman. Scarce had she finished what she was saying, when a cold Sweat covered my Face, and I became so pale that she asked me if I was ill. Mr. *de Maisencourt* came to offer me his Service with an Eagerness, that let me see the Interest he took in my Health : He could scarcely suspect that he alone was the Cause of such a sudden Change. I begged him to suffer me to drink a Glass of Water, and go into the Dressing-Room ; which I had no sooner done, than I shut the Door, with a Design not to make my Appearance while he stayed ; and indeed I refused to open it when he desired to take his Leave of me : As soon as he was gone my Aunt came to me.

“ You must confess, said she, with an Air
 “ that shewed her extremely satisfied with her-
 “ self, that I have sufficiently disconcerted that
 “ Hypocrite *Maisencourt*. I found that he was
 “ willing

“ willing to make himself appear agreeable to
 “ you; and this is not the first Time that I
 “ have observed it. It was necessary for me to
 “ pull off his Mask, to prevent your being de-
 “ ceived by his Praises: He is the arrantest
 “ Coxcomb you ever knew. I saw him one
 “ Day at the Royal Palace, with some Ladies.
 “ You would not have known him: He talks
 “ of Reason and Sentiments before the young
 “ *Agnes*, just as before you; because he knows
 “ that it is the only Bait by which she can be
 “ taken: But with these Women he is trifling,
 “ mischievous, and full of Slander. How sorry
 “ am I for those unhappy Creatures who are
 “ such Dupes as to be fond of him! As he is
 “ agreeable, the Women spoil him by their
 “ Advances; and this it is that makes him
 “ despise us so.” “It is quite equal to me,
 “ said I, rising, in order to return home, whe-
 “ ther he thinks well or ill of Women.” I left
 my Aunt very little satisfied with the Disco-
 veries she had made; and was glad to be at
 Liberty to indulge the Reflections that arose in
 my Mind. Jealousy was the first Sensation
 with which I was agitated. I could not tell
 why I hated so violently that President’s Lady:
 For tho’ I was sorry to hear that Mr. *de Maisson-
 court* had so ill an Opinion of Women, I would
 have been willing that none of them had un-
 dertaken

dertaken to make him Change his Opinion. In short, I revolved in my Mind whatever my Aunt had said on this Subject.

How can such a noble Mind, said I to myself, be so unjust, as to have an Idea of all Women, that ought to be confined to those alone who deserve it ! What, am I confounded in the Throng, and despised by a Man who has inspired me with the most perfect Esteem, and whose Approbation appeared so precious ?— I congratulated myself at last on the Knowledge I had received of his Character. If I had not been informed of it, added I, I might perhaps have been so imprudent as to prefer him to all other Men : And what would have been my Recompence ? The most shocking Contempt. He who is beloved by Ladies of Quality, would despise still more a Girl without a Fortune ; and tho' he should love me, it would be after the same Manner in which young Men of his Rank love a Beggar : Do they condescend to entertain for such a one the Sensations of Esteem and Respect ?

These Ideas took up my Thoughts for several Days, and I was still filled with them when Mrs. *de la Chaise* came to visit us. On seeing me appear pensive, she asked if I was thinking
of

of Mr. *de Maisencourt*. This Question made me blush. I defended myself with Vivacity against the Suspicion she discovered; and my Mother applauded the Aversion I seemed to have for a Man who had displeased her. I had a strong Desire to persuade them that I detested him; and I was so dissatisfied with what I had heard, that I do not know whether I myself did not then believe that I hated him: This, however, is certain, that I desired to see him only to have the Pleasure of shewing him the Indignation I had conceived at his Manner of thinking; and if I still spoke of him, it was to express the Aversion he had inspired me with. Vain Efforts of a Heart really smitten! If we seek for Reasons for hating a Person, often speak of him to create a Belief that he is odious to us, and repeat it to ourselves in order to be persuaded that he is so, is not this constantly to busy ourselves about him, and should we do so if he was really indifferent to us? But I had not yet such Experience in Love, as to perceive that it might be concealed under the proper Marks of Hatred. I so little knew the Nature of my Sensations, that I believed those I felt for Mr. *de Maisencourt*, and those for *Durval*, were of the same Kind. Yet what a Difference was there between them! It seems to me at present, that I chose to punish the one, that I might not love

love the other. *Durval*, on his Side, neglected nothing that could increase my Dislike to him. His Ill-humour broke out so much the more frequently, in proportion to the sensible Decrease of the Funds destined to support his Pleasures. The Money being exhausted, they began to sell the Jewels; the Glasses and Linen followed next; the Tapistry did not wait long before it disappeared. The Affairs of the Family were however re-established for some time; but how infamous was the Means by which this was accomplished!

Durval had a Brother, who possess'd a Benefice in *Provence*, and was probably ignorant of his manner of Life; for he trusted him with Effects to a very considerable Value, which *Durval* sold, and made use of the Money. His Brother hearing of it came to *Paris*, where he was informed of the Irregularities in his Conduct, and Adventures with my Mother. He reproached him with his Immoralities, and villainous Breach of Trust; and vented his Invectives against her, who put him, he said, under the Necessity of committing such base Actions. But they both laughed at his Threats, and replied in the most offensive and provoking Terms. The Abbot lost all Patience, and threatened to have them both confined: This only served to enrage

enrage them the more, and to multiply their Insults; they braved his Resentment, and at last carried Things so far, that if he had not precipitately left the House, they would have added Violence to the Imprecations they uttered against him.

However, their own Reflections soon made them sensible of their Imprudence: They were not ignorant that the Abbot was protected in a singular Manner by his Prelate, and that he might severely punish them both for their Insults, and the Scandal they had given by their Conduct. The Fear of the Consequences that might follow this Event, added to other Subjects of Uneasiness occasioned by our Indigence, rendered our Situation as deplorable as possible. However, Providence seemed still to offer us a Resource which we had no Reason to expect.

Mrs. *de la Chaise* could not see our Misfortune without being moved with Pity; and therefore came one Day to entreat us to accept of an Apartment in her House, assuring us, that Mr. *Dutertre*, the Person from whom she received her Subsistence, was disposed to assist us, till my Mother could find some honest Man who would give her a convenient Retreat.

“ But,

“ But, my Dear, said she, I advise you not to
 “ listen any more to such young giddy-headed
 “ Fellows as *Durval*: They are not suitable to
 “ a Woman who is past the Bloom of Youth;
 “ and besides, you see in what a miserable Con-
 “ dition they leave those who have the Misfor-
 “ tune to be united to them; you are at an
 “ Age in which you should begin to shew a
 “ little Prudence.”

“ I am as grateful as I ought, replied my
 “ Mother with Disdain, for the Protection with
 “ which Mrs. *de la Chaise* condescends to ho-
 “ nour me; but my Condition is not yet so
 “ desperate as to reduce me to Beggary. If
 “ People had the least Delicacy, they would
 “ not render their Offers of Service injurious,
 “ by accompanying them with Lessons that
 “ one has no need of. It is a great Unhappi-
 “ ness to me, that my Choice is not agreeable
 “ to your Taste. But I make love so foolishly,
 “ that I don’t measure my Affections, like
 “ some others, by the Opulence of my Lover.
 “ It is the Heart that conducts me, and not In-
 “ terest: And as to *Durval*’s Youth, there is
 “ not such a Disproportion between our Ages as
 “ you would fain make it be believed: I con-
 “ fess that there might be a greater between his
 “ and yours.”

“ Mine I

“ Mine ! replied Mrs. *de la Chaise* briskly ;
 “ my good Friend, I have not a Girl of eight-
 “ teen Years of Age.” She is no more than
 “ seventeen, Madam, replied my Mother in a
 “ bitter Tone ; however, I don’t know how
 “ it is, continued she with a malicious Laugh,
 “ but I was no more than a Child when you
 “ had one at Nurse.”

“ That is not at all astonishing, said my
 “ Aunt with a self-satisfied Air, when one has
 “ a certain Figure, one finds an Establishment
 “ sooner than others do.” “ As to a Figure,
 “ my Mother replied, I believe I need not yield
 “ to you in that Respect : If I was willing to
 “ believe many Men of good Taste, I should
 “ not know which of us two deserved the Prefer-
 “ ence ; however, a fine Person without Wit,
 “ is no more than a beautiful Statue, capable of
 “ amusing none but such a Lump of Flesh as
 “ Mr. *Dutertre*.”

“ My Dear, returned Mrs. *de la Chaise*, red-
 “ dening with Anger, Wit without Judgment
 “ can only form a hair-brained Thing, that is
 “ guilty of as many Instances of Folly, as she
 “ performs Actions. You understand me, I
 “ believe ?” “ What ! replied my Mother, ad-
 “ vancing towards her, do you insult me in
 “ my

“ my own House ! — This Impertinence deserves —— ” I here threw myself before her to ward off the Blow she designed for her Friend ; when Mrs. *de la Chaise* retired, uttering as she went away the most provoking Expressions. Thus one of them, by her Haughtiness, deprived herself of the only Resource that was left her ; and the other lost the Merit of her Offer, by the ill-timed Advice with which it was accompanied.

The last Expedient they could think of to establish our Affairs, was to inspire me with a high Taste for Luxury and Dress. They were well assured, that, by succeeding in it, they would find a greater Facility in making me agree to the Proposals they intended to make me. *Durval*, in order to prepare me for it, suddenly changed his Behaviour ; he became polite and obliging, and did not let an Opportunity slip of saying gallant Things to me. He sometimes talked to me of a certain Duke, his Patron, as a Man of the greatest Gallantry, and the most magnificent Person at Court : His Liberality to the Women whom he loved was not forgot in the Enumeration of his great Qualities : But he added, that he should be very sorry to have me known to him, because he was persuaded that he could not fail to become in love with

with me, and to make me Offers, that to any other would appear very tempting, and that might probably shock my Delicacy. At another Time he piqued my Vanity, and with all his Address endeavoured to inspire me with the Desire of seeing him on whom he made such grand Eulogiums. I was at first the Dupe of his Artifices ; and my Credulity itself, by inspiring him with Confidence, made him discover those worthy Views he had upon me, and become one Day so imprudent as openly to explain his Intentions. We had a very warm Dispute on this Subject ; but what gave me the greatest Grief was the Manner in which my Mother behaved on this Occasion. Dispense with my tracing here, Madam, her Discourses and Proceedings ; it is sufficient for me to tell you, that I saw the Event ready to justify the Foresight of the worthy Nun who had armed me against their Snares. I then solicited more warmly than ever their suffering me to go to Mr. *de Launay's*, the Milliner I have mentioned. What was my Satisfaction, when some Days after, he himself came to inform me, that the next Day I might accept of the Place which he was now in a Condition to offer me ! The little Time he stay'd with us did not hinder *Durval's* perceiving that he had an Inclination for me : He immediately communicated his Thoughts to my

my Mother, and they both exaggerated the Danger, I should run by entering into his Family; they did not perhaps imagine that it was so great as it was in Reality; but I had too strong a Suspicion of their Intentions to put the least Confidence in their Advice; and I imagined that I could not too soon withdraw myself from the Snares I suspected they were laying for me. But when I took my Leave of my Mother, it was not without being moved at the deplorable State in which I left her: My staying with her could only serve to increase her Distress; and on the other hand, I promised to perform Impossibilities to procure her some Relief by my Labour.

As soon as I was at Mr. *de Launay's*, I thought myself in a Place of Delight: The Indifference with which his Wife treated me, however, diminished a little my Satisfaction; I thought I could perceive that she used me thus only because her Husband shewed more Respect to me than to the other Girls. But I imagined that by my good Behaviour I should obtain her Esteem, and destroy the Hopes Mr. *de Launay* might have conceived. My Refusal, or rather my Contempt, did not discourage him; he always persisted in giving me Marks of the Passion with which he said I had inspired him. I threatened

threatened him with telling his Wife, who distrusted him already ; he knew my Situation, and was not ignorant that I should have no Means of Support if I left him. He therefore made no Scruple to take Advantage of the Necessity I was under of staying in his Family.

“ In telling my Wife, he replied boldly, you
 “ will run a greater Hazard than I : She will
 “ be no sooner certain of a Thing which she
 “ now only suspects, than she will turn you
 “ away ; and I desire to know what will be-
 “ come of you then ? ”

In order to avoid the disagreeable Repetition of his Threatenings, I took the Resolution to endeavour to please my Mistress, and never to leave her. This Conduct disconcerted her Husband : My Assiduity, and keeping in the Company of his Wife, delivered me from his Importunities, and might insensibly acquire me Mrs. de Launay's Esteem and Confidence. These Proceedings astonished him so much the more, as he was not accustomed to such Resistance, nor with a Resistance of that Kind which I opposed against him ; for none of the Girls who lived there had ever been able to secure themselves from his Attempts any other Way than by leaving the House. He was himself surprized at the Respect I imposed upon him,

him, without being obliged to treat him with Rudeness. It seems as if corrupt Minds were forced to acknowledge the Superiority which an Elevation of Sentiments, and Purity of Manners, necessarily give us over them.

Mr. *de Launay*'s seeing that no Man visited me, made him redouble his Affiduity, and seize every Opportunity to teize me with his Passion: I frequently filled him with a Kind of Admiration, when he heard me speak the Language of Decency, to which he had not been accustomed. Sometimes he behaved with Respect, at others rudely, and then he took care to punish himself in order to make me forget his Extravagancies. But how little was he able by all his Endeavours to make an Impression upon me! The vulgar Manner in which he expressed himself, the Meanness of his Countenance, and his low and despicable Behaviour, inspired me only with Disdain. Did my Resistance then proceed from Virtue? Was it not rather from the Comparison I made between him and a Man, who was in all Respects his Superior, and whose only Fault was his having too ill an Opinion of our Sex? It may be still possible, I often said, for me to bring him to juster Sentiments. If he should meet with one who has not all the ridiculous Foibles he has found in

those with whom he has been acquainted, he undoubtedly will do her Justice. And I remember that, without Consideration, I proposed myself as the Object capable of making him change his Sentiments.

I had not entertained a settled Desire of meeting Mr. *de Maisencourt*. However, I had remarked, that he had not taken the least Step to see me since I had been at Mr. *de Launay's*, and I attributed this Indifference to the Disproportion there was between his Station and mine. He had never said in express Terms that he loved me; but in spite of my little Experience, I had discovered in his Looks and Actions, that he did not behave towards me in the same Manner as to other Women. A certain Instinct, rather than any distinct Knowledge, informed me, that I had made an Impression on his Heart, strong enough to make him search for an Opportunity of seeing me.

My Mother had since their Quarrel expressly forbid my visiting Mrs. *de la Chaise*; I however went too see her, and in my second Visit I asked, with the Appearance of great Indifference, if she was at Variance with Mr. *de Maisencourt*, since I now never found him at her House. She replied, that so far from it, he had sent to let her

her know that he would be there in a Moment :
 At this news I felt myself much disturbed ; but
 replied, with an Ingenuity of which I myself
 was doubtless the Dupe, that I feared he would
 come to enquire for me at the Milliner's, which
 could not fail of doing me a Prejudice.

“ That is not to be doubted, she returned.
 “ Therefore whenever he press'd me to tell him
 “ where you lived, I have constantly refused
 “ him, and you may assure yourself that I will
 “ continue to do so.” I thanked her for her
 Attention to my Welfare ; but how little was
 the Agreement between my Heart and my
 Lips !

I had scarce done speaking when Mr. *de*
Maisoncourt entered, when my Confusion made
 him think that he was the Subject of our Con-
 versation. “ I will lay a Wager, said he laugh-
 “ ing, that you were saying no Good of me. I
 “ see it by the young Lady's Blushes.” To pu-
 nish him for having guess'd so well, I made
 haste to reply, that I thanked my Aunt for
 having concealed the Place where I lived from
 him.

“ How unhappy am I ! said he, with an
 “ Air of Concern : What an ill Office has
 E 2 she

“ He done me, in giving you such a false
 “ Opinion of my Sentiments ! Though it had
 “ been true, that I had the Idea it is pretended
 “ of the Sex in general ; would not you alone
 “ be able to destroy so unjust a Prejudice, and
 “ force me to believe that there are Women
 “ worthy of all my Esteem ? Yet I see that you
 “ have entertained a contrary Opinion, and
 “ this is an Idea which I cannot support. I
 “ have not concealed it from this Lady : I have
 “ come hither more than once with the Hopes
 “ of finding you, that I might remove the
 “ Opinion you have conceived of me, and
 “ convince you, that I shall think myself the
 “ most despicable Man living, if I did not ren-
 “ der to you, and to many other Women, the
 “ Justice that is your due.”

“ I am quite enchanted, cried Mrs. *de la*
 “ *Chaise*, with your making this an Affair of
 “ such Importance. Good now, what mighty
 “ Reason have you to concern yourself with the
 “ Opinion my Niece has of you ? Why I
 “ could almost believe that you were in love
 “ with her.” “ You have then forgot, said I,
 “ with an Air disdainful enough, that the Gen-
 “ tleman is only in love with Presidents
 “ Ladies.”

“ With

“ With regard to the Lady *Dorbiere*, he replied with Vivacity, it is well known that I have quitted her ; this Lady is not ignorant of it.” “ You quitted her ! said I with an Air of Surprize : If it is in this Manner you treat the Women you love, I pity those who are so imprudent as to love you.”

“ Don’t be so ready to condemn me, added he with Eagerness : This, since you make it a Crime, deserves to be explained : You will soon see that I have never had any great Attachment to the President’s Lady, and I will even repeat to you the Conversation I had on this Subject ; by this you will see how Love is treated by Persons of Quality.

“ The Chevalier *de Mandane*, one of my best Friends, had the Lady *Dorbiere*, and her Conquest had given him an infinite deal of Trouble.” “ I am weary, said he one Day to me, of the President’s Lady : Not that I have any Reason to complain of her ; for she is the best pretty little Creature : But her Husband plagues me ; he regards my Lady’s Lover as one obliged to be complaisant to him ; swallow his Advice, put one’sself under constraint to humour him, and keep his Hours.

“ If he does not change speedily, I have im-
 “ formed his Wife, that there is not an honest
 “ Man living that will take the Trouble of her.
 “ Between you and I, my Friend, you may
 “ inform your Brethren of the Long Robe, that
 “ it is not enough for them to have handsome
 “ Wives ; before a Man of Gallantry will take
 “ up with them, they must be sociable Hus-
 “ bands, and deserve to have us pleased with
 “ them ; without which I hereby certify, that
 “ they shall be condemned to love their Wives
 “ without daring to own that they belong to
 “ them. But as to the President’s Lady, she
 “ loves me, and I think I should not abandon
 “ her to Despair ; I have therefore resolved to
 “ give her a Successor that may recompence
 “ her for my Loss. Thou hast the Air of a
 “ Magistrate ; and Constraint will be less trou-
 “ ble some to thee than to me. Take this Wo-
 “ man then, as a Proof of my Friendship for
 “ thee. She will have the less Reason to com-
 “ plain of me, as the Lover I have procured
 “ for her is inferior to me in nothing ; and
 “ rat me, if I don’t think that is paying both
 “ her and thee a great Compliment. I have
 “ founded her about thee, and find that thou
 “ art not disagreeable to her. Out of Regard
 “ for me then pay thy Addresses to her, and
 “ endeavour to disentangle me : And I swear
 upon

“ upon my Honour that I will marry the first
 “ of thy Widows that thou think’st deserves to
 “ be treated with some Managèment. I have
 “ upon my Hands a certain Duchefs; an Am-
 “ bassadrefs has made me some Advances; and
 “ the Wife of a Collector of the Revenues has
 “ informed me that my Equipages stand in
 “ need of her Husband’s Purse to put them in
 “ Repair.

‘ You see, Ladies, added *M. de Maisoncourt*,
 ‘ that I could scarcely refuse to my Friend the
 ‘ singular Service he required from me.’ “ You
 “ may depend on my Complaisance, said I to
 “ the Chevalier; but permit me to explain my
 “ Thoughts on the Principles you have taken
 “ up since you have entered the Guards. How
 “ much do I pity you! I see you have suffered
 “ yourself to be drawn away by the Example of
 “ the pretty Fellows of the Age; like them
 “ you sacrifice your real Pleasures to the most
 “ ridiculous Trifles; you see only with their
 “ Eyes; you regulate your Thoughts only by
 “ the irregular Imaginations of the Coxcombs
 “ whom you take for your Models. I, Che-
 “ valier, have followed the Torrent as you do
 “ now: Filled with the Opinions of those who
 “ call themselves the polite World, I have
 “ strove to entertain none but fashionable Sen-
 E 4 “ timents:

" timents : I have sacrificed my Reason to these
 " Opinions ; I have pursued the Happiness of a
 " Day. Alas ! I only embraced an empty
 " Shadow, that always escaped from me when
 " I thought to enjoy it : At last, convinced
 " that I had given way to ridiculous Prejudices,
 " weary of imitating others, and wandering
 " with them, I ceased to be one of the Vulgar ;
 " I quitted the beaten Road ; I thought for my-
 " self ; I followed the Sensations of my own
 " Heart : A Happiness conformable to my
 " Manner of Thinking, to my Station, to my
 " natural Habits, has appeared to me preferable
 " to that you are in search of ; and my Feli-
 " city has no Dependance on the Ideas of an-
 " other."

" But what do you mean by those Prejudices
 " you are talking of ? cried the Chevalier, in-
 " terrupting me ; You treat us as if we were the
 " Vulgar ; when it seems to me, that you, with
 " your stale Morals, deserve that Reproach
 " much better than we. For what is my Plan,
 " if I can ever be said to have one ? It is to
 " shake off the Yoke of all those antique Vir-
 " tues and ridiculous Follies formerly known
 " by the Names Fidelity, Constancy, Esteem,
 " and so forth. These, these I say, seem to me
 " to be the true Prejudices of Gallantry ; and
 " those

“ those who value themselves upon them, de-
 “ serve only the Name of the Vulgar.”

“ I see, my dear Chevalier, I replied, that
 “ you believe yourself to be a very singular
 “ Person, a complete Coxcomb. This is your
 “ supreme Felicity; but what will you Gen-
 “ tlemen do, when you have overturned all the
 “ Ideas you had before received; represented
 “ Decency as ridiculous, and put Fancy in the
 “ Place of Sentiment? You will be obliged to
 “ return to the Point from whence you set out.
 “ The Taste of a Day, like its Fashions,
 “ have only a narrow Circle to move in. Are
 “ not those of your Class very like the Marquis
 “ and the finical Lady ridiculed by *Moliere*?
 “ Recollect, Chevalier, that these Irregulari-
 “ ties were practised above an Age ago, and
 “ that you are practising the Follies of your
 “ Ancestors, at the very Moment when you
 “ are pleasing yourself with the Thought that
 “ you are an Original. The Folly of the
 “ Nation an hundred Years ago seems equal to
 “ that at present: All the Difference I can see
 “ is, that our Ancestors wore Ribbons, and
 “ we adorn our Horses with them. At that
 “ Time the Marquis, like you, ridiculed Vir-
 “ tue, Fidelity, and Constancy in Love: But
 “ are you ignorant that the Citizens in our

“ Days are at least as loose and profligate, with
“ respect to this Article, as the Men of Qua-
“ lity were then? Does any of them value
“ themselves on their Discretion, Fidelity or
“ Constancy? Vanity, Necessity, and Conve-
“ nience, are the only Bonds that unite them;
“ they yield, like you, without Scruple, to the
“ least Disgust; and almost all in our Days are
“ more delighted with giving Pleasure to many,
“ than with being beloved by one alone. Those
“ whom you would imitate are then only the
“ Apes of their Predecessors, and of the Vul-
“ gar: You therefore deserve the Epithets the
“ wise Epicurean gives you, and are Men with-
“ out Character, without Principles, full of
“ Prejudices, employed about little insignifi-
“ cant Ideas, and incapable of knowing true
“ Pleasure. Do not you in Fact sacrifice your
“ Happiness to the Opinions of the silly Women,
“ or effeminate Men, who swarm in Society?
“ What Glory, what Advantage, can you then
“ receive from your Indiscretions?—The Dis-
“ honour of a Women. Cannot you be happy
“ without covering the Person you love with
“ Contempt? Do you not degrade yourself by
“ rendering the Altar contemptible on which
“ you offer Incense?

“ Would

“ Would you become an Original, and the
 “ Former of a new Sect in Gallantry, dare to
 “ introduce Morals into your Scheme: Do in
 “ its Favour what a Duke, whom you have
 “ some acquaintance with, has done for the
 “ Honour of Marriage. He loves his Wife in
 “ the Sight of all *Paris*, and every body knows
 “ that he loves her because she is virtuous, kind,
 “ faithful, and attentive to please him. All
 “ this was not capable of disgusting him;
 “ People at first laughed at them, but the Ridi-
 “ cule is fallen on themselves, and they begin
 “ to esteem them. Take the Resolution to
 “ place your Affections on a Woman of real
 “ Merit, and for her Sake banish a foolish Va-
 “ nity, and every tender Sensation for other
 “ Beauties: Be discrete, speak of her with Pre-
 “ caution, treat her with Respect, and be afraid
 “ of injuring her Reputation. Your Birth,
 “ your Station, your personal Merit, will go
 “ a good Way towards making it the Fashion
 “ of the Age. By mixing Esteem, Respect,
 “ and Mystery, with an honourable and lawful
 “ Passion, you will render it truly delightful,
 “ and promote the Happiness of Mankind. I am
 “ sensible that it must require great Courage, to
 “ oppose a general Taste that flatters the De-
 “ pravity of the Heart; but what Glory must
 “ attend

“ attend it ! Be then, my dear Chevalier, the
 “ Restorer of good Taste ; the Enterprize is
 “ worthy of your Talents ; by this Means you
 “ will cease to be one of the Vulgar, and to
 “ conduct yourself by their Prejudices.”

“ I pass over, said the Chevalier, the Length
 “ of your Dissertation in favour of the Singu-
 “ larity of your Ideas ; but how enticing soever
 “ the Manner is in which you represent them,
 “ I confess that I have not the Courage to put
 “ them in Practice. The Vivacity of my Ap-
 “ petites will not yet leave me the Leisure to
 “ analyze them. But I see in the Plan you
 “ propose an inevitable Inconvenience. I am
 “ afraid I should grow cursedly weary of the
 “ Morality you put into Love. Don’t you
 “ know that it is the Women themselves that
 “ have established the Mode you complain off ;
 “ and that by treating the Sensations of the
 “ Heart with a scandalous Levity, they favour
 “ their Taste for Variety ? But, between you
 “ and I now, have you ever known a Girl who
 “ deserved to be beloved in this Manner ? If
 “ you have been so happy as to have met with
 “ such a one, keep her to yourself ; enjoy a
 “ Happiness which I can scarce believe possible ;
 “ and while you wait till I am wise enough to
 “ follow

“ follow your Advice, do me the Service I demand from your Friendship.”

“ Thus ended our Conversation. I soon after waited on the President’s Lady, and told her that I thought her amiable : She at first paid no great Attention to me ; but as the Chevalier did not fail to give her Reason for Complaint, she chose me for her Confident, and let me know all the Uneasiness he gave her. I then began to persuade her that he was unworthy of her Notice ; and without saying any thing on my own Behalf, endeavoured to wean her from a Passion that could only be the Source of perpetual Inquietude. I spoke of her Husband in the most favourable Terms ; frequently insinuated that she could enjoy no solid, no lasting Happiness, that did not arise from him, and that was not heightened and rendered permanent, by its being founded on Virtue, and the solid Basis of conjugal Affection. She at last felt the Force of my Reasons, owned I was right, and at length looked on the Chevalier’s Infidelity as an Event necessary to recall her to a Sense of her Duty. I must confess, that my Satisfaction greatly exceeded what I should have felt, had I, as well as my Friend, triumphed over her Virtue. While Things were in this Situation,

' tion, my Uncle took it in his Head to marry
 ' me, and forbid my visiting the President's
 ' Lady: I was therefore obliged to obey him.
 ' I beg, Ladies, you would tell me, whether you
 ' now think me so guilty as you at first ima-
 ' gined ?'

" I am not surprized, Sir, replied I, that you
 " have such an ill Opinion of the Women,
 " since those whose Birth and Stations ought to
 " entitle them to Respect are so destitute of
 " Principles. I think now, that if you disesteem
 " them, it is more their Fault than yours.—
 " But the Marriage that was proposed to you
 " is doubtless very advantageous," added I, in-
 " terrupting myself, with my Heart in an ex-
 " treme Agitation.

" Whatever it is, he answered, addressing
 " me with the most tender Regard; I cannot
 " overcome the invincible Repugnance I have
 " to such an Engagement. All my Fortune de-
 " pends on my Uncle; but he may deprive me
 " of the Advantage of being his Heir, if he sets
 " it at this Price. I can form an Idea of no
 " greater Happiness than that of two Lovers,
 " who, after their being united, give daily
 " Proofs of a reciprocal Passion."

I don't know whether Mr. *de Maisencourt*, in speaking in this Manner, had any Design on me; but this I am sure of, that his Delicacy charmed me, and that I regarded him as the Man in the World most capable of forming the Happiness of her he loved. Mrs. *de la Chaise* had her Reasons for being but little satisfied with what he had said; she therefore sought to render the Conversation general. But he soon made her forget this slight Humiliation, by saying some gallant Things on her Person; and concluded with begging her Permission to present to him a Friend, whom he had several Times before mentioned with great Elogiums: He seemed to desire that I should be present at this Interview. I consented, without Difficulty; for what I had heard him say of him, had inspired me with a great Desire to see him: However, as the Moment approached when I was to receive this Advantage, I became seized with Fear and Uneasiness. Mr. *de Maisencourt* had painted him as a Man of Wit, whose Taste was as just as it was delicate; and I did not doubt but that his Design, in bringing his Friend, was to learn his Opinion of me; I trembled therefore, lest I should not succeed in pleasing him. Thus when we love we imagine that all the Actions of the Object on whom we have fixed our Affections have a Relation to us. When Mr. *de Maisencourt* spoke

spoke of him, his Discourse was full of Enthusiasm : But this Warmth was justified by the Man who was the Subject of it. Mr. *de Berville*, for that was the Name of his Friend, was not only possessed of the most perfect Merit, but had Talents that had more than once gained him the Applause of both Theatres : He has even distinguished himself in a Kind of Poetry, in which we have hitherto had but one excellent Author. I imagined that there ought to be a different Behaviour to a Man known by his witty Performances, than to others : I prepared what I had to say ; I adjusted my Looks ; and prescribed to myself a different Way of speaking from what I was accustomed to make use of ; that is to say, I did whatever was requisite to make me appear worse than usual. I was then ignorant that Wit was what Mr. *de Berville* set the least Value upon : He possesses the Perfections of the Heart in a much more eminent Degree, and by these alone he chuses to be distinguished. He is a warm and zealous Friend, a tender and faithful Husband, an agreeable Companion, and, without Affectation or Design, he only employs himself in making all with whom he converses appear to Advantage. It was then to very little Purpose that I took such Pains to prepare myself for appearing before him ; but my Error did not last long ; for the first Proof

he gave me of his Superiority was his making me forget it. He knew so well how to descend to a level with me, that I was frequently tempted to believe that I had as much Wit as he ; and the advantageous Impression I seemed to make upon him, completed the Confidence I received. I was so much the more pleased with his Encomiums, as none of them seemed to be uttered with a Design to praise me : And these were so delicately touched, that Mrs. *de la Chaise* did not even imagine that he said the least flattering Thing to me. As to her, he suited himself to her Disposition by complimenting her in such plain Terms, as to be understood without any great Effort of the Imagination. I was perfectly sensible of the Value of that Difference he put between my Aunt and me. I thought I had a second Time made a conquest of Mr. *de Maisontourt*, when he informed me of the favourable Judgment his Friend had given of me. It seemed as if from that Moment I ought to be more certain of his Heart, and from that Time mine was more tenderly devoted to him than ever. But notwithstanding my being entertained with such agreeable Sensations, I was always attentive to the Fate of my Mother.

The Abbé *Durval* had carried his Resentment further than I had imagined. I was informed that

that he had caused his Brother to be shut up in Prison, and that the Fear of losing also her Liberty had determined my Mother to disappear and conceal herself. I could not help weeping for her Misfortune : It was impossible for her to be in an easy Situation : I caused all imaginable Inquiries to be made to discover her Retreat, but all in vain. How many Reflections did I then make on the Calamities of our Family ; on the deserted Situation I was in ; and on the Uncertainty of my Fate with respect to Futurity ! Persuaded that we should never prosper, while we bore the Hatred of those who gave us Birth, I often strove to find out some Means of prevailing on my Grandfather to restore us to his Favour ; but my Sister and her Husband kept about him in such a Manner, that I had no Hopes of succeeding in it. I then perceived, in all its force, the Necessity there was of relying on my Labour, and the Advice of the good Nun. And to complete my Misfortune, I received no more Letters from that worthy Woman, for her Infirmities prevented her writing.

In a little Time I made all the Progress necessary to make me capable of following the Trade in which I was engaged : I already began to have a Prospect of a more happy Fate, when

Mr.

Mr. de Launay's Extravagancies plunged me again into new Misfortunes.

His Wife had the same Opinion of me that Women commonly have of one another : They with Difficulty believe them virtuous, and give an easy Credit to their being vicious. : Notwithstanding all the Pains I took to undeceive her, she always suspected me, and thought my Resistance was only designed to set a higher Price on my Conquest. She had many Times been willing to turn me away ; but her Husband strongly opposed it ; and the polite Manner in which I sold Things to her Advantage, was a second Motive that had suspended the Effects of her Ill-will : She therefore satisfied herself with watching me. Her Husband, who had always his Designs in view, had often attempted to introduce himself into my Chamber ; but he was always disappointed : He resolved however to make a last Attempt, which he concerted with one of his other Servants : They chose a Night when his Wife was absent, and the other young Women were busy in the back Shop, finishing a Suit of Headcloaths which you, Madam, designed for the young Lady your Daughter, who was that Night to be married. They gave me a Part of the Work, and under the Pretence that the Number of the Workwomen would hinder each

each other, sent me, with my Companion, to work in my Apartment. Mr. *de Launay* soon came to us, and told us that his Wife being gone to buy some Lace, we should have the Liberty of conversing without exciting her Anger. I foresaw that he was going to speak of his Passion ; but the Presence of my Companion gave me Encouragement. I was not deceived ; his Discourse was at first accompanied with all the Respect of which he was capable. As soon as she who was at work with me saw the Conversation begun, she made a Pretence for going down Stairs, which at that Moment I saw without distrust, tho' the Care she took to shut the Door upon us gave me some uneasiness, which Mr. *de Launay's* Behaviour encreased.

Scarce was he alone with me when he became less circumspect ; that I might get rid of his Importunity, I rose with a Design to leave him ; but he forced me to stay, he held me fast in his Arms : I struggled to get from him : His Wife bounced into the Room with Fury in her Eyes. Her Husband was the first Victim of her Rage ; but she soon left him to fall upon me ; when her Resentment was carried so far, that to avoid its Effects, I was obliged to leave the Room, and run down Stairs : She followed me, giving me the most scandalous Names, and protesting that

that she would that Instant drive me out of the House.

The pressing Necessity your Ladyship was in for the Headcloaths we were making for you, had brought you to Mr. *de Launay's*, you were in the back Shop where they were finishing them, when I appeared, pursued by my Mistress. Your Presence was not sufficient to calm her Rage. To justify her Extravagances she told you what she had seen, but in such a Manner as to make you believe that I was guilty; and when I attempted to reply in my own Defence, she knew so little the Respect due to you, that she came forwards to use me ill. However my Tears and Consternation moved you, and you had the Goodness to speak in my Favour; but your Endeavours were ineffectual; Mrs. *de Launay* persisted in her Resolution to oblige me to go by myself to Mrs. *de la Chaise's*, though it was then late. Not being able to prevail on her, you was pleased to give me one of your Men to accompany me; I accepted of him with gratitude, and left her.

I was not expected at my Aunt's at such an Hour, and therefore could not gain Admission till I had wakened the Family. Was it possible for me to foresee, that by a strange Fatality,

the Assistance you had the Goodness to afford me, should be turned against me? Mrs. *de la Chaise* reproached me with much Heat, for being so imprudent as to suffer myself to be conducted to her House in the middle of the Night by a Servant in a rich Livery: Her Neighbours she said, could not fail to draw from it Conjectures that would be very injurious to me. And as to the Men, they never scruple to judge by Appearances.

Mr. *de Maisencourt* came the next Day to see Mrs. *de la Chaise*, who told him what had happened to me; and the lively Interest he took in my Situation moved me extremely. "What then must be done with this lovely Girl?" said he, very affectionately. "We will seek another Shop," replied my Aunt. "Good God," replied he, with a deep Sigh; a Shop for a Person so worthy of a better Fate! It is cruel that one cannot wish her less Delicacy, without rendering her less worthy of Esteem! "What would I not do to give you all the Proofs of my Affection that your State requires! But the Assistance which it is in my Power to offer you, would appear to you as injurious, and the Sentiments I would discover cannot fail of displeasing you. I dare not talk with you on this Subject; because,

" if

“ If I inform you of the Situation of my Heart,
“ you will perhaps believe that I would take
“ Advantage of your Situation. But don't be
“ afraid that I shall wound your Delicacy : I
“ know how to respect Virtue wherever I find
“ it, and especially when it is accompanied by
“ all the Charms which imbellish yours. I see
“ at first, that, with the Prejudice you have
“ against me, you will have no Confidence in
“ any thing I can say to you ; but in spite of
“ that, I cannot help giving you a Glimpse of
“ those Sentiments that will last as long as my
“ Life.”

The Perplexity I was under for a Reply, was
sufficient to discover the true Disposition of my
Heart. But he who caused my Confusion was
very far from the Truth, if he believed that I
was prejudiced against him. We were going
to be both equally disconcerted, if Mrs. *de la*
Chaise had not briskly replied, “ O my Stars !
“ such amorous Nonsense to *Constantia* ! This
“ is mighty good : I'll lay a Wager that she
“ understands no more of this Stuff than I do.
“ Besides, my Dear, added she, shrugging up
“ her Shoulders, you will lose a great deal of
“ Time with her ; for I give you my Word,
“ she is the coldest Girl you ever met with :
“ She is a perfect Block of Marble ; She does
“ not

“ not know she has got a Heart, nor the Mean-
 “ ing of Love, and all that. What fine Con-
 “ versation she will be able to hold with you !
 “ The delightful Pastime that the Prattle of a
 “ young *Agnes* will afford you ! I have never
 “ known any thing so tiresome as her Com-
 “ pany : You will never hear her sing a Song
 “ that’s a little gay, or tell a diverting Story.
 “ Provided she can talk of Sentiments, Mora-
 “ lity, or Books, she’s content ; and if ever she
 “ admits a little Life into her Conversation, it
 “ it is to tell you, that under such an Emperor
 “ such a Monument was built ; or that such a
 “ City, whose Name she sees by Chance, is the
 “ Capital of *China* or *Congo*. Now I would
 “ ask, if a Man heartily in love has any Occa-
 “ sion for all this Impertinence ? My Dear,
 “ you, if you would live a great deal in a little
 “ Time, must be full of Mirth, learn to
 “ wheedle, have your Jokes, pleasant Flights,
 “ and all the Refinements of Pleasure.”

I was very angry, without knowing why, at
 what Mrs. *de la Chaise* had said ; however, I
 replied, that I should find some Difficulty in
 correcting the Faults she charged me with, since
 I desired to have them in a Degree superior to
 what she could imagine ; and added, that above
 all Things I should take care of resembling the

Model

Model she seemed to propose for my Example.

“ Why so? cried she, tartly,” Because, said I, the first of your Pictures resembles a worthy Woman whose Mind is adorned, and the other goes no farther than a Woman of Gallantry.

“ Say rather, Miss, she returned, that the one is

“ the Picture of a Fool, who, like you, affects

“ to be thought a Person of fine Sense; and

“ the other, that of an amiable Woman, who

“ has seen the World, and knows what is pro-

“ per to amuse a Lover.”

It was easy to perceive, that if I had replied, my Aunt would have been thoroughly displeased.

It was plain that she put my Picture in Opposition to her's, to make me confess that her's

was the finest Piece: I let her therefore applaud

herself for the Advantage she thought she drew

from the Parallel. Mr. *de Maisencourt* acted

with the same Complaisance, and endeavoured

to change the Conversation; but she always

brought us back to the Comparison; and believing

that my Presence hindered him from giving her

the Applause she deserved, she desired me to go

and mount a Cap for her in her Dressing-Room.

Tho' I saw that this Order was only given with a

View to humble me, and to make him who ap-

peared to have an Inclination for me, ashamed of

his Choice, I obey'd; but was resolved to hear

the rest of the Conversation thro' the Partition.
Scarce had I disappeared when she said,

“ Indeed I don't know what to make of you :
“ I have perceived that you had an Inclination
“ to this Girl for some time past, and really I
“ can't help being surprized that you, who are
“ allowed to be a Man of Sense, and are so well
“ versed in Women, should have so little Judg-
“ ment; why, you can't imagine how silly she
“ is. Has she been able to make one Word of
“ Answer to all the fine Things you said to her
“ just now? What do you find in her Person
“ that is so surprizing? Her Eyes are well
“ enough you will tell me; but her Nose is re-
“ markably little. Is it that fresh and bloom-
“ ing Complexion, the Gift of Youth, that
“ makes her appear so agreeable? why these
“ browns are quite insupportable. Her Shape
“ appears well enough at the first Glance, but
“ she is excessively tall; and if she was not in a
“ tolerable good plight, would be of a ridicu-
“ lous Length. And then, my dear Friend,
“ continued she, in a Tone of Pity, how I
“ should compassionate you when you had a
“ private Conversation with her! What vain
“ Scruples would you have to surmount! What
“ a foolish Modesty to overcome! What silly
“ ridiculous Prejudices to debate and combat
with!

“ with ! for she is still glued to all the Maxims
 “ she learnt in the Convent. I can’t therefore
 “ answer for it, that at the End of fifteen Days
 “ you will have brought her to be a reasonable
 “ Creature : Nay, how does one know, but a
 “ Prude of this Kind may make a worthy Man
 “ wait a Month ? And I ask you now, whether
 “ you should like to purchase so small a Hap-
 “ piness at so dear a Price.”

Mr. *de Maisencourt* would not make Mrs. *de la Chaise* the Answer she deserved. He sought to keep fair with her, and was not ignorant that she could not bear to have a Woman thought amiable in her Presence. She was reasonable enough in other Respects ; but she no sooner heard any one touch on the Article of Charms, than, like Don *Quixote*, with respect to Chivalry, she was incapable of listening to Reason. He answered her then only in general Terms, and staid this Day longer than usual. My Aunt saw very plainly that this was done to give me Time to return, but I durst not appear again after the Picture she had just drawn of me. What intimidated me most was my having made no Reply to the many obliging Things he had said to me. I would have been glad to have made him sensible, that I was far from being so prejudiced against him as he imagined ;

but at the same Time I could wish to let nothing escape me that could discover the whole of that Impression he had made upon me ; and I did not imagine that I had the Art necessary to make me observe all these Precautions. While I employed myself about these Thoughts, and was emboldening myself in order to make my Appearance, he prepared to take his Leave, and my Aunt hindered him from going to the Closet to speak to me. At this Moment how heartily did I hate her ! Her Cap suffered for it : I threw it from me more than once, with Indignation, and at last laid it wholly aside, to give myself up to my Vexation. The most cruel of all my Reflexions arose from my having let Mr. *de Maisencourt* go without deceiving him, with respect to the Opinion he believed I had entertained of him.

“ He is going to hate me, said I ; what In-
 “ justice have I been guilty of ! I have shewn
 “ nothing but Signs of Indifference to him who
 “ has always expressed Esteem and Affection for
 “ me : He has done me kind Offices, and I
 “ have repaid him with Ingratitude. Oh that
 “ he could read my Heart ! he would there
 “ find Sensations very different from those he
 “ suspects.—But what am I saying, have I that
 “ Regard for him that is called Love ?”

At this Idea all my Senses were disordered, I durst not fix my Attention upon it ; but after continuing for a Moment in a Kind of Suspension of Thought, I resumed with a Sigh. “ In
 “ the mean while they are going to prevail on
 “ him to marry ; if I had seemed to make him
 “ a Return of Affection, or at least not to dis-
 “ approve his Passion, he would perhaps resist
 “ with still more Courage the Proposals which
 “ he has already said are not agreeable to him.
 “ After all, what is his Marriage to me ? Tho’
 “ he should love me, tho’ I should love him,
 “ can I ever aspire to the Hope of having him
 “ for my Husband ? No certainly. Am I not
 “ the Daughter of a Woman of Gallantry ?
 “ and did he not become acquainted with me
 “ in the House of such another ? He would then
 “ only make me his Mistress. I will do my-
 “ self Justice then, and will not suffer my
 “ Mind to be filled with such unreasonable
 “ Thoughts. I am to blame to indulge myself
 “ with such flattering Hopes ; I, who am in
 “ the most unhappy State, and who perhaps
 “ may not to-morrow have a Place on which
 “ to lay my Head.”

My Aunt and I now employed ourselves in searching for a Milliner, who was willing to

take me into her Family; but we found Difficulties that we had not foreseen. Mrs. *de Launay* had not confined her Resentment to turning me away; she had vilified me in the most cruel Manner amongst those of the same Profession. When People have been guilty of a Piece of Injustice, they think to justify it, by adding to it every Aggravation. Her Calumnies were too easily credited. After endeavouring for fifteen Days to no Purpose, we found that there was a Kind of Agreement between the whole Body not to receive me; and they gave it as the Reason of their Refusal, that I was a dangerous Girl, and good for nothing but to disturb the Peace of Families.

In the mean while I continued without the Prospect of Relief; and to heighten my Misfortune, we were informed at this Time that my Grandfather was seized with an Asthma, that would probably in a few Days bring him to his Grave. I then felt more strongly than ever the Desire I always had to find the Means of appeasing his Anger. The Remembrance that I had been born of Parents who were disinherited, had always been so painful as to imbitter all the Sweets of Life; but my Eagerness to get out of this deplorable State did not prevent my perceiving how incapable I was of taking, -withour Assist-
ance,

ance, the Measures necessary for my Success. Mrs. *de la Chaise*, notwithstanding her Zeal to promote my Interest, was too imprudent to be able to conduct me in so delicate an Affair; and I could find none but Mr. *Maisoncourt* capable of making my Project succeed; but I felt, with respect to him, a Timidity that astonish'd as much as it perplexed me: It was impossible for me to speak to him, without an Emotion, that never left me room to hope that I should have the Freedom of Mind necessary to enable me clearly to explain my Thoughts to him. I had therefore recourse to Mr. *de Berville*, whom I had often seen, and in whom I had placed an entire Confidence; and I chose to communicate my Design to him at a Time when my Aunt and Mr. *de Maisoncourt* were engaged at play. He seemed as sensible of the Esteem I express'd for him, as charmed at finding that I had taken such a Resolution. What a Satisfaction did his Answer give me! He assured me that the Success of my Project did not seem to him to be impossible, and promised to act in it in concert with Mr. *de Maisoncourt*, to whom he would communicate my Views as soon as he had ended his Game. They in Effect consulted together on the Method they should take to get an Admission into Mr. *Vermont's* House. I could not contain the Joy I felt at the Eagerness they

shewed to do me this important Service. As soon they were gone I embraced my Aunt with Transport, and told her that I was at the Height of my Expectations, since I should perhaps be able to shew my Gratitude for the Services she had done me. She answered me with a Coldness, which I thought I had not the least Reason to expect : But I have since remarked, that People of her Disposition always see with Uneasiness the Prosperity of those who had before been humbled by Misfortunes, that had given them a kind of Authority over them.

Tho' the Steps taken by Mr. *de Maisencourt* tended to deprive him of all Hopes of accomplishing any Design he might have formed of making me his Mistress, yet I will do him the Justice to say, that he behaved in this Affair with all the Warmth of a sincere Friend ; but he found Mr. *de Vermont* beset by those about him in such a Manner, that it was impossible to get near him. My Sister and her Husband had given him a Housekeeper, whose principal Employment was to keep from him every Body capable of putting him in mind of my Father. Mr. *de Maisencourt* was not however discouraged ; he gained over one of the Servants who served under the Housekeeper ; but this Girl having but ill-concerted her Measures for introducing an

an old Friend of my Grandfather's, who was to speak in our Favour, she was instantly turned away. He came to inform me of this Accident with all the Marks of Despair. "I see, how-
 " ever, said I, one resource left ; People ap-
 " proach the Great by Means of their Wives or
 " Mistresses ; and those in a more retired Life by
 " their Directors : Cannot we interest Mr. *de*
 " *Vermont's* Confessor in our Behalf ? I cannot
 " think that an honest Man can make a Scruple of
 " contributing to the Success of a Design so law-
 " ful as that we would accomplish ; but I know
 " nobody capable of informing us who he is."

I took upon myself the Task of speaking of it to Mr. *le Franc*, who was then my Confessor : I remembred that I had already desired him to make some Attempt on my behalf on the House-keeper's Director, with whom, I was informed, he had some Acquaintance ; but he had told me that his Friend had given him the strongest Reasons against interfering in the Affair. Mr. *de Maisencourt* said, that whatever were his Reasons they ought to yield to the Justice of my Cause, and the pressing Necessity of not suffering a Father to die in a State of Enmity to his Son. He resolved to go himself to convince Mr. *le Franc* ; and my Aunt and I went with him : His Arguments were so powerful that he could not re-

use to assist us with his good Offices with his Friend: We could now see no other Difficulty but that of getting into Mr. *de Vermont's* House. After we had examined and abandoned a Number of Expedients, I had a Thought, which I at first hesitated to communicate, from the Fear of its being thought romantic: However, I determined to propose it.

“ You know, Sir, as well as we, said I to
 “ Mr. *le Franc*, that the second Servant has
 “ been turned away.” “ I know more, he
 “ replied, and that is, that the Place is still
 “ vacant.” “ I believe I can penetrate into your
 “ Design, added my Aunt, you would place
 “ one in her Room who is in your own In-
 “ terest.” “ But, replied Mr. *de Maisencourt*,
 “ where shall we find a Girl in such a Station
 “ who has Wit enough to behave better than
 “ those that have gone before her ?” I know one,
 “ said I to him, that I believe is capable of con-
 “ ducting our Affairs, the Interest she will have
 “ in them will give her the necessary Intel-
 “ ligence: It is myself.”

At this they all turned towards me with Looks of Surprize and Attention: “ Yes, added
 “ I, I perceive that I have the Courage to be-
 “ come my Grandfather's Servant; and with-
 “ out

“ out doubt, I shall be the Housekeeper’s Con-
 “ fident. She has never seen me ; and neither
 “ my Brother nor Sister know me ; and if by
 “ Chance they should ever have seen me, I shall
 “ be so disguised by my Dress, that it will be
 “ impossible for them to recollect me.”

Mr. *de Maisencourt* eagerly seized both my Hands, and expressed the great Esteem this Resolution gave him for me. Mr. *le Franc* took upon himself the Task of having me presented by his Friend, and my Aunt that of purchasing the Cloaths suitable to my new Station. I went to dress myself at the Sale-shop where she bought them, that nobody might be acquainted with my Disguise. What a Satisfaction did I feel on being covered with these Cloaths ! I never felt such a lively Sense of Pleasure in putting on the richest Dress. They had taken care to disfigure me as much as possible. However, the natural Whiteness of my Skin gave me a Complexion that was absolutely necessary to be tarnished. My Aunt took upon herself the Task of performing it with incredible Zeal, and succeeded in it to a Miracle.

I was then presented to Mrs. *Allin*, for that was the Housekeeper’s Name. But notwithstanding all the Efforts they had made, to take from me
 whatever

whatever was capable of rendering my real Station suspected, she appeared surprized at my Behaviour: For it is not easy to efface the Manners we receive from a good Education, and being accustomed to Decency.

“ A Girl of your Appearance, said she, ought
 “ to be very strictly on her Guard if she is not
 “ naturally wise; but I am told that you come
 “ of very honest Parents, and that they will an-
 “ swer for your Behaviour; so I have nothing
 “ to say, especially after what he has said, who
 “ had done you the Honour to recommend you.
 “ You seem to me, added she, to be too tender
 “ for what you are to perform; they should
 “ have told you that you are to do the most
 “ tiresome Work in the House. We have an
 “ old Man to take Care of, who is very in-
 “ firm and peevish: He is never to go out with-
 “ out my Permission, and has no Communi-
 “ cation with any Body, and none comes here
 “ but our Master’s Grand-daughter and her Hus-
 “ band: Not but that he has a Son; but he has
 “ been obliged to disinherit him, for a second
 “ dishonourable Marriage, which he had the
 “ Weakness to contract in spite of his Father.
 “ It is necessary to let you know, that we are
 “ placed here principally to watch the old Man,
 “ and carefully to keep out of the House who-
 “ ever

“ ever may come here in Behalf of his Son ; for
 “ he has already taken some Steps, in order,
 “ you must know, to take Advantage of his
 “ Father, whose Head begins to fail him. With
 “ this Design he corrupted the Girl we had last ;
 “ therefore if you would stay in the Family,
 “ take Care of all those who would speak to you
 “ about him.” I promised fully to comply
 with the Instructions that were given me.

Mr. *Franc* had informed me, that Mrs. *Allin*
 was very imperious and ill-tempered ; but I
 took such Pains to please her, that she could not
 find an Opportunity to be out of Humour with
 me ; my Docility and obliging Behaviour
 greatly pleased her, and I soon obtained both
 her Affection and Confidence.

THE

I have been thinking of you very much lately, and wondering how you are getting on. I hope you are well and happy. I have been very busy lately, but I have managed to find some time to write to you. I have been thinking of you very much lately, and wondering how you are getting on. I hope you are well and happy. I have been very busy lately, but I have managed to find some time to write to you.



THE
S C H O O L
O F
W O M A N.

P A R T II.



IT is not easy to describe the Emotion I felt the first Time I saw my Grandfather, in him that was pointed out to me as my Master. My first Emotion would have led me to throw myself at his Feet; but as this Action would have betrayed me, I contented myself with executing the Orders the House-keeper had given me.

Mr,

Mr. *de Vermont*'s Countenance bore the Impression of Grief; and a certain Composure very different from that Peevishness I had been informed of: And from him I was convinced that those who complain of Ill-humour are almost always the Persons who are the most ill-humoured.

Mr. *de Vermont* was at first astonished at the tender Vigilance with which I waited upon him, and his Surprise was soon succeeded by his Gratitude. This dear Man, who was censured for being subject to Anger, had from henceforwards a Sweetness of Disposition which Mrs. *Allin*, ill-natured as she was, could not avoid acknowledging. She was ashamed to shew her Rudeness before a young Person, who never answered her, but by Patience and Good-nature. A Politeness of Manners has a Charm that is the more engaging, as it always seems to yield to those whom it attracts and conquers. Her Behaviour therefore softened every Day; we frequently strove who should discharge the most difficult Offices: And I was sometimes tempted to believe, that she involuntarily acknowledged that I was born rather to command her, than to receive her Orders.

This happy Change had already made a sensible Progress when we were informed that my Sister was come to pay a Visit to the old Gentleman ; I was in my Master's Apartment ; she sat down without condescending to fix her Eyes upon me ; and ordered Mrs. *Allin* to bid me leave the Room. I had not the same Indifference for her, I looked at her earnestly, and was rewarded by the Pleasure of seeing how much we resembled each other ; Youth alone made some Difference between us. I watched in the Place to which I retired, her Manner of speaking to my Grandfather, and that in which he replied. I saw that she strove very much to shew her Tenderneſs and Cordiality, while the Eyes of him who was the Object of her Careſſes, ſhewed very little Senſibility to a Behaviour, the Sincerity of which he could not help ſuſpecting. Her Viſit was but ſhort ; but it was concluded by a long Converſation with the Houſekeeper ; but I could not hear what was ſaid.

My Maſter inſenſibly accuſtomed himſelf to talk to me. He perceived, in ſpight of all the Care I took not to appear to have a Knowledge above my Rank, that I had not been educated for the Station in which he ſaw me. He communicated his Conjectures ; I confeſſed they
were

were just, and told him in general, that the ill Conduct of my Parents had reduced me to Servitude. This Confidence, I thought, without discovering me, would make him place in me a greater Confidence ; and I was not deceived.

“ Alas ! said he with a deep Sigh, I have a
 “ Son, who perhaps by a like Conduct will put
 “ the Daughter he has by his second Wife under the same Necessity : You have doubtless
 “ heard of him. Has he still the same mad
 “ Fondness for Chemistry and Electricity ?
 “ Does his Wife live with the Man who corrupted her ? Good God ! what have I done,
 “ continued he, without giving me Time to
 “ reply, that should make it necessary for thee
 “ to afflict me so sensibly in the dearest Object
 “ of my Affections ! Heaven is my Witness,
 “ that tho’ I disinherited him, it was not done
 “ with a Design to banish him from me ; but
 “ to make him merit, by a better Conduct, a
 “ Pardon, which he has not even condescended
 “ to ask.”

Mr. *de Vermont*’s Eyes were moistened at these Words ; and I attempted to seize this Moment to speak to him in favour of my Father ; but he interrupted me. “ It is too late,
 “ cried he, he has filled up the Measure by too
 “ long

“ long an Indifference. He has a monstrous
 “ Heart, that has never known the most sacred
 “ Sensation of Humanity, an Affection to his
 “ nearest Relations. Has he condescended to
 “ maintain the least Connection with his Son-
 “ in-law and Daughter since their Marriage?
 “ And does not the Coldness he has always
 “ shewn to them, justify their Desire that he
 “ should die under my Indignation? Is it possi-
 “ ble for Philosophy, which is called the Study
 “ or the Science of Wisdom, to destroy all
 “ Sensibility in the Men who make it their
 “ Employment?”

“ You judge, Sir, perhaps with too much
 “ Severity, said I, wiping away the Tears
 “ which I could not help letting fall; a false
 “ Shame, that has such a powerful Influence
 “ over great Minds, has doubtless hindered
 “ him from following the Emotions of his
 “ Heart.” “ Ah do not aggravate his Faults by
 “ endeavouring to justify them, cried he, he
 “ knows better than you the Indulgence with
 “ which I would have received him. Can he
 “ be ignorant of the languishing State I have
 “ been in for so many Years? Has he been in-
 “ formed of the dangerous Condition to which
 “ my Infirmities have so often exposed me?
 “ Has he taken the least Step to see me, and to
 “ produce

“ produce a Change in my Sentiments with
 “ regard to him? It is not so much his first
 “ Fault, it is not so much my despised Autho-
 “ rity that now irritates me against him, as the
 “ Indifference with which he beholds my Re-
 “ sentment. He is not ignorant that this is
 “ the Cause of all my Illness; that what has so
 “ greatly shortened my Days, is the being
 “ cruelly deprived of seeing a Son who ought
 “ to be the Consolation of my old Age. Cease,
 “ my Child, he continued, on seeing the
 “ Tears I shed, cease to interest yourself in
 “ the Fate of an ungrateful Wretch, whom
 “ nothing has been able to move. I forbid
 “ your ever speaking of him; he deserves nei-
 “ ther your Compassion, nor the Sensations
 “ that will swell my Heart whenever he is the
 “ Subject of my Discourse.”

Mr. de Vermont left off speaking of his Son;
 but I saw by his Agitation and Sighs, that it
 was only to employ his Thoughts the more
 freely about him. In spite of the Indignation
 he had shewn against him, the Heat with which
 he express'd himself, gave me the greatest Hopes.
 These Hopes were however disturbed by the
 Fear, that the Person most difficult to be con-
 ducted in this Affair, would be him who ought
 to reap the Advantage. I was very sensible
 that

that Mr. *de Vermont* had exaggerated his Son's Insensibility ; I trembled however, lest I should find in my Father an Obstinacy so great, as to prevent his concurring in the Success of my Design. The first Time I could go out, I mentioned my Fears to Mr. *de Maisencourt* and Mr. *de Berville*, and they promised to go and prevail upon him to listen to my Views.

For my Part, I continued my Services to Mr. *de Vermont*. He desired me to read to him, after which I spent whole Days in his Apartment. He did not disdain to communicate to me his Reflections on what I read, nor to hear mine. " How unhappy am I, said he sometimes, that " I cannot express to all the World the Satisfaction you give me ! but if I do not care- " fully conceal it, my Housekeeper will be jealous of it, my Daughter will be filled " with Suspicions, and I should perhaps be " soon deprived of a Person so necessary to my " Happiness. Why, added he, looking earnestly at me, should a Girl so worthy of " Esteem be obliged to go to Service ? What " Reproaches, what Self-reproaches ought her " Parents to feel ! Alas ! I repeat it, perhaps " my Grandchild is in a State yet more deplorable. What can she do while abandoned " by her Mother, and neglected by a Father, " who

“ who has no Affection for any thing but Che-
 “ mistry ? What will become of her ? They
 “ tell me she has virtuous Sentiments ; but
 “ will these alone render her happy ? What
 “ Resource is there for a Girl of this Cha-
 “ racter ?

Mr. *de Vermont* then asked me, if I had not
 heard the same of her ; when I seized that Mo-
 ment to tell him, that since I had been in his
 House I had informed myself about her ; and
 then took this Opportunity to tell him, under
 my real Name, whatever had happened to my-
 self, suppressing however what might discover
 me, or make him acquainted with the Sensa-
 tions I felt for Mr. *de Maisencourt* : But my At-
 tention to this last Circumstance did not prevent
 his replying : “ Do you believe that this Friend
 “ to the Family, of whom you have said so
 “ many worthy Things, is really so generous
 “ as he appears ? For my Part, I much fear
 “ that they have an Inclination for each other.
 “ Men of this Character are very dangerous to
 “ a Woman of Sense.”

If Mr. *de Vermont* had at this Moment fixed
 his Eyes upon me, I don't know how I should
 have justified the Confusion in which he would
 have seen me : My Answer was however turned
 in

in such a Manner, as not to diminish his Esteem for her he mentioned. I could not, after all, have confessed to him Sentiments with which I was not as yet fully acquainted. “ I would
 “ fain believe, added *Mr. de Vermont*, that my
 “ Grand-daughter is what you have painted her,
 “ and I am the more satisfied as she appears to
 “ resemble you in all Respects. Is it possible,
 “ continued he, after observing the Zeal with
 “ which I had endeavoured to merit his Fa-
 “ vour, than one should meet with more Af-
 “ fection from Strangers than from one’s own
 “ Children? My Son knows that I have but
 “ a few Days to live, and has not the least De-
 “ sire to see me.” “ I find, Sir, said I, that
 “ you are not informed of the Truth; it is
 “ necessary that I should tell it you then at the
 “ Hazard of displeasing you. The Girl whom
 “ I succeed was turned away for attempting to
 “ introduce one of your old Friends, who came
 “ to speak to you in favour of your Son.”
 “ Of my Son! *Mr. de Vermont* replied with
 “ Surprise. Are you very sure of what you
 “ tell me?” “ I am very sure of it, I returned
 “ in a firm Voice, and this doubtless is not the
 “ only Step that has been concealed from you.”
 “ ’Tis true, replied he, in a Manner that ex-
 “ pressed his Vexation, that my Housekeeper
 “ and my Daughter beset me in such a Man-
 “ ner,

“ ner, that I cannot see any Person in the
 “ World without their Consent.—But after all,
 “ these Endeavours are quite usefess ; he makes
 “ them too late : They cannot efface an In-
 “ difference that has lasted full eighteen Years.
 “ Do you remember that I have forbid your
 “ speaking to me of him ?” On pronouncing
 these Words he fell into a deep Revery, which
 I thought I ought not to disturb ; I therefore
 seemed only to employ myself about my Work ;
 tho’ I watched the Emotions he discovered,
 while these and his frequent Sighs informed me
 that his Thoughts were employed about his
 Son. At last he suddenly cried out, with great
 Impatience, “ No, I’ll hear nothing in his Fa-
 “ vour ; my Resolution is taken : But what
 “ you have said of his Daughter has moved me.
 “ Inform yourself about her the first Time you
 “ go out ; it is not just that she should fall a
 “ Victim to the Disorders of her Parents : I
 “ design to send her some Assistance ; and to
 “ begin to give her Proofs of my Affection by
 “ making her a Present, by means of that Lady
 “ Mrs. *de la Chaise*, who has so generously
 “ assisted her ; but it must be on Condition
 “ that you will engage her to give her Word
 “ that she will not inform the young Person of
 “ the Interest I take in what concerns her.” I
 promised every thing, and let Mr. *de Vermont*
 know

know how greatly such Sentiments increased my Veneration for him.

I went to consult those who interested themselves in the Success of this Affair, how I ought to behave in the Disposition in which I now found him : We agreed that I should assure him of Mrs. *de la Chaise's* Discretion, and that, with respect to his Grand-daughter, I should tell him, that she as well as I was at Service, in a House, where, from a Respect to her Father, she concealed her Name and Birth : That when the Assistance was proposed, she had replied, that she had no need of it ; and that moreover, her Delicacy would not permit her to receive any thing, without knowing the Hand that sent her this Supply.

I spoke to Mr. *de Vermont*, conformably to the Measures we had taken ; and added, that every thing that was said of this young Creature rendered her worthy of vanquishing the Repugnance he felt against being reconciled to his Son. “ No, I will never see him, said he, “ with more Grief than Resentment ; it is not “ a momentary Action that can atone for all “ the Uneasiness he has given me. The un- “ grateful Monster would only appear before
G “ me

“ me to receive my Estate, and triumph in my
 “ Death.”

I strove to destroy such disadvantageous Sus-
 pitions, and to persuade him that his Health
 was not so bad, as to threaten him with the
 Approach of Death. “ I know my State better
 “ than any Body else, added he, dolefully ;
 “ but I see the Danger without being alarmed
 “ at it. Why should I regret a Life, every
 “ Moment of which has for so long a Time
 “ been marked with Grief. The Weakness
 “ of my Body is not the only Proof of my
 “ drawing to an End ; that of my Mind equally
 “ assures me of it : I perceive that my Age and
 “ Uneasiness have impaired it, and given me a
 “ Forgetfulness which they will perhaps abuse
 “ so far as to demand my Interdiction, as they
 “ have already threatened me : If my Son had
 “ loved me I should never have dreaded such an
 “ Humiliation.”

“ If this Son should come here to throw him-
 “ self at your Feet, said I, on seeing him sof-
 “ tened, make you a Confession of his Faults,
 “ merit a Pardon, and beg for the Return of
 “ your Affection, would you consent to re-
 “ ceive him ? May he flatter himself with re-
 “ gaining a Heart he has so long loved ? Con-
 “ descend

“ descend to grant this Favour to my Tears
 “ and my Prayers, continued I, throwing my-
 “ self at his Feet. You have sometimes offered
 “ to reward my Services; they will be rewarded
 “ an hundred fold, if I can contribute to re-
 “ establish Peace amongst Persons who so well
 “ deserve to be brought together, and live in
 “ mutual Esteem. Recollect that your Resent-
 “ ment will become fatal to the young Person
 “ for whom you have already interested yourself.
 “ Can you be insensible to her Misfortunes?
 “ Call to Mind that you have been willing to
 “ grant her Assistance, and that she is still be-
 “ come more worthy, by her Refusal to accept
 “ it. Will you suffer so worthy a Woman to
 “ remain in Disgrace? 'Tis true she is born of
 “ a Marriage which you have disapproved;
 “ but does that prevent her being of your
 “ Blood? What Consolation will it be to you
 “ if you see her in my Place, while she will
 “ envy me, and make it her Duty and her
 “ Honour to serve a Grandfather so worthy
 “ of all her Tenderneſs; a Father who for
 “ her has sacrificed a lawful Resentment, and
 “ who by this Instance of Generosity will have
 “ given her a second Life, a thousand Times
 “ more precious than the First! I answer for
 “ her, that her Heart, I judge of it by my own,
 “ will be unable to contain her Gratitude.”

In speaking thus I held one of Mr. *de Ver-*
mont's Hands, which I bathed with my Tears.
 " Let me alone, said he, with a Voice inter-
 rupted by the Tenderneſs of his Senſations ;
 " ceaſe to tear my Soul by your Prayers." I
 lifted up my Eyes to look at him ; I ſaw his
 moiſtened with Tears from which he could not
 refrain ; I kiſſed his Hand with freſh Ardour,
 aſking him if he would not yield to my En-
 treaties.

" Let me alone I tell you, replied he ; I
 " have not a Mind free enough to answer you.
 " All I know is, that if I was ſure to find in her
 " for whom you plead a Mind like yours, I
 " would."—He ſtopped at theſe Words : His
 Agitations appeared to me ſuch, as made me
 think that I ought not to urge him any far-
 ther : He even fell into ſuch ſtrong Convul-
 ſions ſome Moments after our Converſation, as
 made me tremble for his Life ; and we were
 for many Days employed in contributing to his
 Recovery.

I ſaw my Siſter ſeveral Times in this Inter-
 val ; but ſhe always treated me with the Diſdain
 with which ſhe was accuſtomed to behave to an
 ordinary Servant ; nor could all the Pains I took
 to

to please her make her behave to me with the least Complacency ; even the Praises Mrs. *Allin* bestowed upon me made but a small Impression upon her. Are the Minds then who are so sensible to their own Interest, shut against every other Sensation ? How much are they to be pitied ! My Sister had doubtless a great Pleasure in enjoying, by Anticipation, the Wealth which the approaching Death of my Father was to give her ; but how much more did I taste in contributing to the Health of this same Parent, in seeing him sensible of my Eagerness to serve him, in enjoying my Sister's Error, in obeying her, and endeavouring to conciliate her Esteem ? I was more happy in giving her Proofs of the Goodness of my Heart, than she was in receiving them ; for I sometimes saw her embarrassed to support the Coldness with which she received my Services.

As soon as Mr. *de Vermont* was out of Danger, it was agreed between Mr. *de Maisencourt*, Mr. *le Franc*, and I, that we would go to my Father to prevail on him to concur with us in a Design from which he was to reap the principal Advantage ; but we were unhappy in the Choice of the Time we fixed upon for waiting on him : We found him in the midst of a chemical Operation, that would appear of vast importance,

if we were to judge of it from the Vexation he discovered at being interrupted. After having met with several Rebuffs from him, Mr. *de Maisencourt* explained to him the Cause of our Visit ; and Mr. *le Franc*, to bring him to a Compliance, made use of the strongest Arguments, drawn from Reason and Morality ; to which my Father answered with a Smile, that he had nothing to object against such Reasonings.

“ We are not come here, Sir, said Mr. *de Maisencourt* to dispute with you, but in quality of Friends to the Family ; and to represent, that a Person must be wanting in what he owes to a Father, and to himself, to refuse such a Reconciliation.” “ You believe then, replied he, ironically, that I have many Obligations to my Father : But what are these Obligations ? Do they consist in his having contributed to my Existence ? In reality I am greatly obliged to him for having yielded at that Instant to the Allurements of Pleasure.” My Father then added many Reasons, the End of which was to prove, that the Obligations of Children to their Parents, was a Prejudice from which he had been freed by Philosophy. “ Some Gratitude however is due to mine, said he at the Conclusion, since to his Resentment I owe my Poverty,
“ and

“ and doubtless that Love of Study which
 “ Riches perhaps would have driven away.”

“ I confess, replied Mr. *de Maisencourt*, that
 “ I could not have imagined you could have dis-
 “ puted the Obligations of Children to a Fa-
 “ ther ; but the Sentiments you have just deli-
 “ vered are too monstrous for me to believe
 “ them sincere ; and probably you are less
 “ disposed to shew us the true Disposition of
 “ your Heart, than the Extent of your Under-
 “ standing, which is capable of proposing the
 “ most generally received Opinions as Subjects
 “ of Debate : We will therefore do you the
 “ Justice to believe, that you will not regulate
 “ your Conduct by the Answer you have just
 “ made. With respect to the Resentment you
 “ complain of, you have it in your Power to
 “ put an End to it, since we come to offer
 “ you the Means. Miss has already disposed
 “ Mr. *de Vermont* in your Favour ; and you
 “ may hope, that if you take the least Step
 “ towards it, you will determine him to estab-
 “ lish you in the Possession of all your Rights.
 “ This, in my Opinion, replied my Father,
 “ will be to very little Purpose. I have been
 “ told that my eldest Daughter and her Hus-
 “ band have caused him to be declared incapa-
 “ ble of disposing of his Estate.” “ ’Tis true

“ they have threatened it, replied I, but they
 “ have not yet done it. They may, however,
 “ if you do not make haste to prevent them.
 “ Mr. *de Vermont*’s Mind is sensibly impaired,
 “ and his Health is so bad as to give a Prospect
 “ of his speedy Death.”

“ If you would have me speak freely, re-
 “ plied my Father, I must tell you, that I have
 “ no Interest in taking the Measures you pro-
 “ pose to me : I live contented with a moderate
 “ Pension allowed me by my Creditors. The
 “ Study of Nature, the Analysis of the Princi-
 “ ples of Things, Experimental Philosophy,
 “ and the Knowledge of Simples, employ my
 “ Attention, and are the Objects on which I
 “ place all my Affections. My Son-in-law is
 “ greedy of Wealth, which he procures by all
 “ the Means in his Power ; while I am only
 “ greedy of Knowledge, which is the only
 “ Riches I am ambitious of obtaining. I re-
 “ spect my Father as much as I ought ; but I
 “ don’t feel any Inclination to expose myself to
 “ his Correction, nor to make a Confession of
 “ Faults, which we do not both look upon as
 “ Matters of equal Importance. It is near twenty
 “ Years since we have seen each other : my
 “ Presence is not therefore essentially necessary
 “ to his Happiness, and I sincerely protest
 “ that

“ that his Fortune is as little so to mine. You
 “ shall see, Gentlemen, in what I place my
 “ supreme Felicity.” In saying this he led
 us into his Laboratory, which we entered to
 avoid disobliging him.

“ You see here, continued he, Gold sepa-
 “ rated by a very different Kind of metallic
 “ Substance, by means of Antimony: There
 “ you have Silver dissolved in Aquafortis; and
 “ in that Place you have the same Metal
 “ separated with a nitrous Acid, by Distil-
 “ lation.”

You must not be surprized, Madam, at my
 retaining all these Terms, since I was fami-
 liarised from my Infancy to this learned Dialect.
 My Father at that Time employed me in Ope-
 rations that demanded great Dexterity, and I
 performed them happily enough.

“ If you chuse it, added he, I will go and
 “ analyze now before you, Nitre by Arsenic;
 “ but the Operation would be too long: I
 “ chuse rather to shew you some curious Cri-
 “ stallisations, Congelations and Petrifications:
 “ These Wonders are worthy of great Ad-
 “ miration. Here, continued he, is the Spirit
 “ of Wine dephlegmated by Means of alkaline

“ Salt, and there combined by a vitriolic Acid ;
 “ You see here Crystal of *Venus*, and there
 “ Aurum Fulminans : In this Place is Mer-
 “ cury dissolved in a nitrous Acid, and in that
 “ sympathetic Ink. You see I am not one of
 “ the Fools who amuse themselves in the Search
 “ of the Philosopher’s Stone.”

I expected that some of them would have re-
 plied, that the most rational Operations in Che-
 mistry could never justify a Man, who, for their
 Sake, abandoned the Care of his Fortune, neg-
 lected the Order and Regularity he ought to in-
 troduce into his Family, and refused to dis-
 charge the Duties of a Son, a Father, and a
 Husband ; but this was not a proper Time for
 such Remarks.

“ I confess, said Mr. *de Maisencourt*, that
 “ all these Things are worthy of the Curiosity
 “ of the Adepts ; but let us suspend, for a Mo-
 “ ment, the Admiration all these Wonders de-
 “ serve, to pay a closer Attention to the In-
 “ treaties we are going to make to you. If your
 “ own Interest cannot determine you to take a
 “ Step so just in itself, let that of a Daughter,
 “ who ought to be dear to you, lead you to it.
 “ To what a Situation is she reduced ! She is
 “ Servant to him who ought to place her in a
 “ State

“ State of Ease and Affluence: To what do
 “ you expose her, by suffering her to be in a
 “ Station that does not entitle her to meet
 “ with the least Respect?”

“ She will follow her Mother’s Example, re-
 “ plied my Father in an ironical Tone; some
 “ charitable President will place her in a bril-
 “ liant Situation.” He added other Pleasan-
 tries of the same Kind, and concluded with
 long Reasonings, to prove that it was of very
 little Importance to the general Order of So-
 ciety, whether a Person was rich or poor. I
 could scarce contain the Impatience his Dis-
 course gave me. But Mr. *de Maisencourt* made
 an Advantage of it, in order to fight him with
 his own Weapons; that is, it put him in a
 Method of Reasoning that he believed would
 prove more agreeable.

“ You have made, Sir, too great a Progress
 “ in sound Philosophy, said he, not to know
 “ that the highest Degree of Perfection, of
 “ which the Mind of Man is capable, is to
 “ distrust even Philosophy itself; that is, to be-
 “ lieve that it can neither give us certain
 “ Knowledge, nor invariable Principles. The
 “ true Philosopher then, is he who distrusts
 “ Philosophy, and whose Mind is always dis-
 “ posed

“ posed to trace back its Steps, and to examine
 “ anew the Truths that at another Time have
 “ appeared extremely evident : All Fondness
 “ for a System forms in our Minds an insur-
 “ mountable Obstacle to the new Lights we
 “ might receive : When we have fixed our
 “ Opinions we do not defend them as Truths,
 “ but as the Idols for which we have a blind
 “ Superstition. I would have you then, Sir,
 “ as you know these Principles better than I
 “ can pretend to do, condescend to make an
 “ Application of them to the present Con-
 “ juncture, and examine without Prejudice,
 “ whether your Indifference for a Father and a
 “ Daughter, is not the Fruit of a dry Specula-
 “ tion that ought not to extinguish the Sen-
 “ tions of the Heart : For you also know, that
 “ the true Philosophy is that which teaches us
 “ plainly to distinguish the different Uses we
 “ ought to make of the Faculties we are en-
 “ trusted with by Providence. All the Opera-
 “ tions of the Soul, while it is capable of Con-
 “ ception, ought, if I am not deceived, to
 “ be applied only to Things speculative : A
 “ severe Dialectic is then the only Rule that can
 “ inform us, what Degree of Confidence we
 “ ought to allow to the different Propositions
 “ that are submitted to our Judgment : Let us
 “ take the Geometrical Compass, let us lose
 “ ourselves

“ ourselves in Algebra, every Time the Que-
 “ stion in abstract Sciences and metaphysical
 “ Combinations require it : But in the Opera-
 “ tions of the Soul, considered as it feels and
 “ as it loves, let us take a quite different Rule
 “ to direct its Emotions, or rather the wisest
 “ Philosophy then is that which reasons least,
 “ and which knows how to prefer the Emotions
 “ of the Heart to vain Distinctions, when these
 “ Emotions only lead us to Sensations which
 “ all Nations by common Consent regard as
 “ just, sacred, and indispensable ; such as filial
 “ Piety to a Father, and the Love of a Father
 “ to his Children.”

“ I conceive like you, Sir, that there is a
 “ very lively Satisfaction in having performed a
 “ difficult Analysis with Success, in having
 “ discovered new Combinations, and unknown
 “ and more perfect Methods of arriving at
 “ great Truths : But how unhappy should I
 “ think you if you had never tasted any other
 “ Kind of Pleasure ! Bountiful Nature has
 “ offered us another Source of Happiness, and
 “ a Happiness much superior to that which the
 “ Sciences afford us ; that is, the Power of
 “ contributing to the Felicity of Creatures like
 “ ourselves ; that of loving and being beloved ;
 “ and in a Word, that of creating Happiness.
 “ Are

“ Are you ignorant that this Advantage is the
 “ noblest Appurtenance of Humanity? it ren-
 “ ders us the Image of the Supreme Being, and
 “ makes us participate in his Excellence. I
 “ say more, it makes us share in his Happiness.
 “ But of these Truths we are not to be con-
 “ vinced by Reasonings. Let your Heart act
 “ freely; shut it not against the Sentiments
 “ which Nature has placed there; open it to
 “ the Compassion it ought to feel for the deplo-
 “ rable Fate of this young Lady; blush not at
 “ being a Father, her Sentiments render her
 “ worthy of your Esteem.”

I added my Tears and Entreaties to what Mr.
de Maisencourt had just said: In short, my Father
 having considered what he had heard with a
 Kind of silent Admiration, embraced him,
 saying, “ I am obliged to confess that you
 “ have not said a Word that has not brought
 “ with it a Ray of Light; you have informed
 “ me of the true Dispositions we ought to bring
 “ with us in the Search of Truth: I will pre-
 “ serve the Remembrance as long as I live.”
 They reasoned some time longer on the same
 Subject, and I saw that the Pleasure my Father
 took in this Conversation, would lead him to
 do what we would have him. The principal
 Difficulty

Difficulty was removed ; but all the Obstacles were not yet levelled.

My Father asked what we would have him perform ; when Mr. *de Maisencourt* mentioned with all imaginable Precaution, the Manner in which he ought to behave on his appearing before his Father ; and told him, that it was indispensibly necessary that he should accost him as a Son that repented of a Fault which he desired him to forget. However, notwithstanding all the Softenings he could invent, my Father could not consent to submit to the Humiliation which he found they required from him. He declared that he would very willingly second our Views ; but he could not stoop so low as to ask for a Pardon. We found him so averse to this Step, that we durst not insist on the Form of the Interview ; we however thought ourselves very happy in obtaining his Promise to come to Mr. *de Vermont's*, as soon as we should give him Information. For my Part, I indulged the Hopes that he would suffer himself to be moved by the Sight of his Father, and that a tender Moment would make him do what he then refused with such Steadiness.

From this Time I chiefly employed myself in finding the Means of introducing him into the
 I House,

House, without the Housekeeper's Knowledge, and this was no small Difficulty. Mr. *le Franc* help'd me to surmount it: He promised to detain, in concert with his Friend, her whom it was our Interest to deceive, and to inform me of the Day they should fix upon to hinder her returning to the House before our Design was executed.

But tho' my Enterprize was in a very happy Situation, I was always in fear of its failing thro' my Father's Inflexibility. I however let Mr. *de Vermont* know that I had seen his Son, and that he longed to come and throw himself at his Feet, and to entreat his Pardon. I observed that his Surprise at what I told him had more Uneasiness in it than Displeasure; I had still some Repugnance on his Side to struggle with, and tho' he did not give me his express Consent for presenting to him the Person I spoke of, I saw that when the Moment came he could not refuse to receive him.

The Day in which this important Affair was to be concluded at last came: Under what Apprehensions did I spend the Night by which it was preceded! What Fears and Hopes mutually destroyed each other! The Reconciliation of the Family, of which I was a Part, was what I
desired

desired with the greatest Ardour; and if I carried my Views to the Wealth that would flow into it, this was only that I might be furnished with the Means of aspiring to the Honour of receiving his Hand who had hitherto been a Father to me. What Felicity should I find in sharing with him a Fortune capable of flattering his Ambition, and rescuing him from the Importunities of an Uncle who endeavoured to force his Inclinations! But what cruel Reflections succeeded these delightful Ideas! How many unforeseen Circumstances might ruin my Design!

Mr. *de Maisencourt* had agreed to bring with him Mr. *de Berville* and my Father in his Coach, and to wait at the Distance of a few Doors till I made the Sign we had fixed upon. The Moment arrived: My Father entered alone, and I introduced him into a Chamber that adjoined to Mr. *de Vermont's*.

“ Let us first, said he with some Emotion,
 “ agree how you would have me to act; it is
 “ in vain to bring me hither with the Hope
 “ that I will behave with any Meanness on
 “ your Account: You may be assured that the
 “ whole World shall not force me to such an
 “ Abasement.” “ Do you think there is any
 “ Meanness,

“ Meanness, said I, in humbling ourselves be-
 “ fore a Father? If I had the Misfortune to
 “ displease you, no Submission would appear to
 “ me too great to regain your Affection.” “ Do
 “ you imagine, said he, that I will be obliged
 “ to conform myself to the Ideas of a Child?
 “ In one Word, I tell you again, that you
 “ must not hope that I will do any thing that
 “ can degrade me. I will salute my Father, I
 “ will make him no Reproaches, and I will
 “ speak to him without Bitterness: This is all
 “ I can do for you, and I think that this is as
 “ much as ought to be expected.” “ Yet you
 “ have made us hope, said I, penetrated with
 “ Grief, that you would confess your Faults,
 “ and desire him to forget them.” “ That
 “ may be, replied he with Impatience; but
 “ then I yielded rather to your Importunities,
 “ than the Solidity of your Reasonings.” I still
 entreated him, but it was all to no Purpose: In
 short, he bid me make haste, for he wanted to
 go home, because he had some Things in a
 Fermentation.

I then determined to inform Mr. *de Vermont*
 that his Son waited his Permission to appear be-
 fore him. I did all I could to colour over, in
 the best Manner possible, the Coldness I fore-
 saw there would be in his Behaviour. Mr. *de*
Vermont

Vermont could not hear of his Son's being so near him without having his Mind greatly agitated : He made me no Answer when I begged his Consent to my bringing him in : I took his Silence for a Mark of Approbation : " I am
 " afraid, said I, that the Uncertainty he is in,
 " whether his Presence will be agreeable to you,
 " will put some Constraint on his Actions ;
 " condescend, dear Master, to give him Confidence by the Kindness with which you receive him. You know that a Sense of our
 " Faults shuts up the Heart."

" If my Son brought with him as much Tenderness as I am disposed to feel for him, replied *Mr. de Vermont*, sighing, he would have more Hope and less Reserve : I know him to be a Man capable of but little Sensibility ; but though I am afraid to find him unworthy of Pardon, I hope to see this Deficiency made up by the Merit of his Daughter ; she alone shall have it in her Power to determine me. Is she with him ?" " You shall see her, Sir, said I, and I hope you will find her worthy of the Dispositions you entertain in her Favour."

I then went to rejoin my Father, when I begged that he would seem willing to submit himself

himself to Mr. *de Vermont*. "I will answer for
 " it, added I, that he will not suffer it; and
 " that you will have the Merit of a Submission,
 " without feeling the Shame that might attend
 " it. He is very much disposed to give you a
 " kind Reception; but is it not just that you
 " should appear to make the first Advances?"

"I throw myself on my Knees! replied my
 " Father. No, I'll never do it; I will embrace
 " him, but no more, I assure you." I then
 saw that Philosophers have their little punctilious
 Humours as well as other Men. In short,
 vexed at his Coldness and Indifference, and
 trembling with Fear, lest Mrs. *Allin* should
 return before he left the House, I determined to
 present him to his Father. "Here, Sir, is
 " your Son, said I, who comes to desire you to
 " forget what is past, and to assure you, that
 " in spite of the Appearances of Indifference,
 " visible in his Conduct, he has always pre-
 " served the most tender Respect for you."

Mr. *de Vermont* was too much troubled to per-
 ceive that my Father did not utter a Syllable.
 "Well Sir, continued I, walking up to him,
 " will you not condescend to give him one
 " Word of Consolation?" He then looked
 upon his Son, with Eyes that were at first filled
 with

with Tenderneſs; but ſeeing the Coldneſs of
 his Behaviour: “ You ungrateful Wretch,
 “ cried he in a Tone of Indignation, fall at
 “ my Feet, or for ever leave my Preſence.”
 “ O Sir! cried I, kiſſing his Hand, do not over-
 “ whelm a Son, already too much humbled by
 “ the Senſe of his Faults: Till this Moment
 “ you have conquered him by your Generoſity:
 “ Finish your Work; he is worthy of a Father
 “ like you.” “ But tell me, added Mr. *de*
 “ *Vermont*, addreſſing his Diſcourſe to my Fa-
 “ ther, why do you deprive me of the Plea-
 “ ſure of ſeeing your Daughter? I would have
 “ you know, Sir, that if I reſtore you to my
 “ Favour, it will be only from my Compaſſion
 “ for you in the deplorable State to which you
 “ are reduced, and from an Eſteem for her
 “ Virtues. Why does not ſhe appear?” I
 then threw myſelf at Mr. *de Vermont*’s Feet.
 “ You muſt know her again, ſaid my Father,
 “ ſhewing me to him; you ſee her at your
 “ Feet.” I then liſted up my Eyes, with a
 Look of Timidity and Tenderneſs on Mr. *de*
Vermont: His Surprize was ſuch as would not
 ſuffer him to find Words to expreſs it. “ How,
 “ *Conſtantia*, my Child! ſaid he at laſt with a
 “ deep Sigh: Ah! ought not I to have diſ-
 “ covered it by every thing ſhe has done for
 “ me? You my Child! added he, giving me
 “ the

“ the most affectionate Look. You shall ac-
 “ knowledge that I am the most tender Fa-
 “ ther.”

I then rose and threw myself into his Arms, which he held open for me, and there continued without the Power to utter a Word ; I broke from him however to fall at my Father's Feet, and engage him to take Advantage of the Tenderness I had just excited. *Mr. de Vermont* then held out his Hand in the most affecting manner, when his Son, unable to resist the Force of a Father's Tears; fell prostrate and kissed his Hand, with all the Marks of the most sincere Affection.

Mr. de Vermont was out of himself, his Agitation was so great that I perceived he was fainting; I informed his Son of it, who instantly assisted him with a Zeal even more ardent than that with which I was animated. On his returning to himself he found us both employed in procuring for him all the Relief he stood in need of. “ What, said he, is it then
 “ true that I find in my Son the Heart I wished
 “ for, and in my Daughter the Woman most
 “ worthy of Esteem !” He held out to each a Hand, which we seized, at the same Time throwing ourselves on our Knees on each
 “ Side

Side of his Easy Chair. " Yes," continued he, after having looked first at one, and then at the other. " This is the most happy Moment of my Life. Enter again, my Children into all your Rights : May you enjoy my Estate with greater Happiness than I have done ; but never leave me. Deliver me from the Tyranny under which I have so long groaned, and contribute to my Happiness, since I contribute to yours with such Satisfaction.

I cannot express the exquisite Delight I felt ; but my Happiness was not to be of a long Duration. The Difficulties my Father had made before he entered the Apartment had occasioned our losing many precious Moments, and given Mrs. *Allin* Time to return, who entered without being perceived, and nothing that her Master had just said escaped her. I was going to thank Mr. *de Vermont* for his Goodness, when she seized me behind in a violent Manner, and would have struck me, if my Father had not prevented her. This Event made such an Impression on Mr. *de Vermont*, that he fell into the same State which some Days before had put me in Pain for his Life. My Father drove out Mrs. *Allin*, and left me alone with my Grandfather. I made use of all the Endeavours in my Power

Power to retain him, on an Occasion in which his Presence was so necessary ; for I foresaw that my Sister and her Husband, as soon as they were informed of what had passed, would come, in their Turn, to force me out of a House where I had nobody to protect me : But the Care of his Chemical Operations was once more to destroy all our Hopes, and it was impossible to retain him.

Scarce was he gone, when my Brother-in-law, with the Housekeeper, and some Domestics, arrived : My Entreaties could have no Effect on Men who had designed to make use of Violence in forcing me away from my Grandfather, and indeed I was constrained to abandon him to avoid the Treatment with which I was threatened.

From this Moment I could learn no News of him, except what I was told by Mr. *le Franc*, who some Days after informed me, that the Disorder he had been put into by his Interview with his Son, had made them resolve to get him interdicted. Upon this Mr. *de Maisencourt* went to my Father's to give him Advice by what Means he might prevent the Effects of this Interdiction ; but he was told that he was gone to gather Herbs on the Mountains of *Auvergne*,
and

and that they did not know when he would return. I now lived at Mrs. *de la Chaise's*, in the same State I was in before I undertook the Enterprize that had just failed ; that is, without any Resource.

Mr. *de Maisencourt* was so touched at my Misfortune, that he durst neither speak to me of his Passion, nor offer me the Assistance, which he rightly judged I should not accept. My Uneasiness was too violent to be of long Continuance. I regarded all my Disgraces as an Intimation from Heaven informing me, that I ought not to hope for Happiness in this World. After long consulting with myself, I found a 'Cloister to be the only Place of Security I had left, and communicated my Thoughts to Mr. *le Franc*, who told me nobody was admitted into a Convent without Money ; and that tho' I had none, his Friendship for me determined him to strive all in his Power to find a charitable Lady to pay it for me : I chose by Inclination the *Hotel Dieu*, where I resolved to serve the Poor for the Rest of my Life.

I was obliged to stay with Mrs. *de la Chaise* till Mr. *le Franc's* Endeavours were crowned with Success ; my Regard for her did not prevent my frequently perceiving that I was a

H

Burthen

Burthen to her ; and to render my Stay still more disagreeable, what ever little Care I took of my Dress did not fail to give her frequent Inquietude ; and so far did she carry this Humour, that a Man having unhappily appeared to give me the Preference, I was obliged to suffer the Effects of her Ill-humour for eight Days together.

Mr. *le Franc* met with more Difficulty than he had expected in procuring the Money that was necessary ; and I then, Madam, recollected that you had already given me some Marks of your Favour : This I mentioned to him ; but how great was my Satisfaction, when he replied, that he had the Honour of being known to you : He even added, pardon his Indiscretion, that you sometimes made Choice of him to convey your Bounty to worthy Families fallen into Decay. My Hopes were not disappointed, you generously promised to advance the Sum I had occasion for ; and I resolved to take Advantage of your Goodness.

Scarce was this Resolution formed, when I communicated it to Mrs. *de la Chaise*, who confirmed me in it in such a Manner, as made me impatiently long to leave her House ; and Mr. *de Maisencourt* coming the same Day to pay

us a Visit, I desired her, from I know not what Motive, to conceal my Design from him : But I repented of this Step, as soon as he informed us that the President had wrote with great Earnestness for him to come to him in the Country, probably to hasten his Marriage. I then imagined that this would be the last Time I should see him ; I recollected that there could have been no Danger in letting him know my Design, and that the Manner in which he had always interested himself in my Affairs, gave him a Right to complain of my concealing such an important Event from him.

My Aunt's Indiscretion however soon relieved me ; she told him of it, and this News threw him into a Consternation very difficult to be described : But his Grief filled me with too much Satisfaction for it not to excite her Envy ; she therefore gave me her Orders to retire, and at the same Time offering her Hand to Mr. *de Maisencourt*, took him out with her, without giving him Time to describe what he felt on my Account.

How many Tears did I shed as soon as we were separated ! And with what Regret was I filled at my not having informed him, before he

left me, of my Sentiments in his Favour ! But I was obliged to yield to Necessity.

The Morning of that Day arrived in which I was to bid Adieu to the World, when *Angelica*, my Aunt's Housekeeper, entered my Chamber before her Mistress was up, and after spending a full Half Hour in bestowing the highest Encomiums on Mr. *de Maisencourt*, and describing the Ardour of his Passion for me, she gave me a Letter from him. I reproached her in a very serious and severe Tone for her Conduct, and told her that I would let her Mistress know it. She made use of many Arguments to persuade me against this Resolution, and her Mistress coming in, I put the Letter into my Pocket. As soon as I was left alone, I tried to open it without breaking the Seal. But what Advantage, said I to myself, shall I reap from the Gratification of this Curiosity ? It is determined that in two Hours Time I shall enter into the Cloister ; and nothing that can be said in this Letter that will be able to shake my Resolution. Alas ; if I had been to continue in the World, I would have lived only for him ; why am I not placed in a Situation that would allow me to aspire to his Heart, and to give him mine, without a Crime ? He would have rendered me happy, and my Tenderness would have made

me

me spend my Life in contributing to his Felicity ; but now I can only become his Mistress : Yet if the State of his Wife is too honourable, this last is too unworthy, and attended with too much Guilt, for me ever to accept. At pronouncing these Words, I was going to tear the Letter, when I perceived that I had broke the Seal. I blushed ; but after a Moment's Recollection, continued I, yet after all, since my Resolution is fixed, and nothing can ever shake it, what Impression soever the reading of this Letter may make upon me, the more Passion it expresses, the more meritorious will be the Sacrifice I make. Here I opened it, and what I read too deeply affected me, for me not to remember the whole of it. The Contents were as follows :

“ I should reproach myself, dear Miss, for
 “ the State in which I leave you, did I not
 “ know that I could not offer my Assistance
 “ without offending you. The Opinion you
 “ have of Mankind will not suffer you to ima-
 “ gine that there is one among them capable of
 “ sharing his Fortune with you without en-
 “ tertaining Hopes injurious to your Virtue.
 “ Before you believe this, it seems necessary for
 “ him to find a Way to your Heart ; for Love
 “ alone can make you overlook the Mortifica-
 H 3 “ tion

" tion which Souls like yours always find in
 " receiving. But supposing all Men to be with-
 " out Delicacy, would not you be capable of
 " refining the grossest Soul? Is there one who
 " does not respect your Misfortune, and who
 " would not think it his Duty to oblige you, from
 " the single View of succouring distressed Me-
 " rit? O undeceive yourself! Know better
 " the Power of Virtue over our Hearts. Why
 " am not I permitted to express all that passes
 " in mine? I dare assure you, that yours is not
 " more pure, and that I would give my Life
 " to obtain the Confidence which the Rectitude
 " of my Intentions deserves. What Pledge
 " shall I give you then of my Sincerity? It
 " shall be my Indifference. I am going to make
 " a very singular Confession; and that is, that
 " I do not believe the Passion you have inspired
 " me with is Love; if it is, 'tis of a very
 " different Kind from any I have yet felt.
 " When I search my Heart, I only perceive it
 " filled with a respectful Esteem; and my
 " Affection for you has never raised in my Soul
 " Emotions which you might not feel; it in-
 " spires none but noble and virtuous Senti-
 " ments. What then can you fear from a Man
 " who feels a Love like this? Condescend to
 " put me to the Proof, and you will see that as
 " you think more justly than other Women,
 " you

“ you have met the Man who best deserves your
 “ Confidence. I am not afraid to inform you
 “ of my Sentiments, because I believe them to
 “ be worthy of us both: I do not flatter myself
 “ however with my being able to persuade you;
 “ but at least I shall have given you a Mark
 “ of my respectful Attachment, and of the ten-
 “ der Concern with which I interest myself in
 “ your Situation.”

I am, &c.

Ah! too easily do you persuade me, cried I, read-
 ing the Letter. But had I the Confidence you
 would inspire me with, should I not have Reason
 to fear the Weakness of my own Heart? Would
 it be so insensible as to suffer me to look with
 Coldness on such Love and Respect? No, I will
 avoid so great a Danger, by accomplishing what
 I have begun; and at least if I cannot live for
 you, I will never be any Body's else.

I had scarcely pronounced these Words, when
 my Heart contradicted them, and I was doubt-
 less going to relapse into less reasonable Senti-
 ments, when word was brought me that Mr. *le*
Franc waited for me: A sudden Stupefaction
 seized all my Senses. This Gentleman per-
 ceived my Embarrassment, and seeing me Eyes
 swimming in Tears, desired those that were in

the Room with him to withdraw ; and when we were alone, asked the Cause of my Uneasiness : He spoke with such Compassion, and in a Manner so adapted to procure my Confidence, that I gave him the Letter, and sunk into my Chair.

He had no sooner read it, than lifting up his Eyes to Heaven with a deep Sigh, he asked if these Proposals had been capable of changing my Vocation. Finding that instead of answering him my Tears and Sobs were redoubled, he said ; “ If you really love the Author of this
 “ Letter, renounce your Design of entering the
 “ Cloister ; for Heaven will not accept the
 “ Homage of a Heart prophaned by so criminal
 “ a Passion. But is it possible, my Child, for
 “ you to have been seduced by the false Delicacy visible in this Paper ? Have not you
 “ started at the indecent Proposal he has here
 “ made you ? What does he here promise, if it
 “ is not to take you into Keeping ? Are you
 “ ignorant that Men always make use of these
 “ Artifices to seduce the Women whom they
 “ believe to be virtuous ? Nothing is so dangerous to a Mind like yours as the Veil under
 “ which the Snare that is held out to you is concealed : Vice is never so dangerous as when
 “ it takes the Mask of Virtue. But that you
 “ may

“ may know the Depth of the Abyss into which
 “ they would plunge you, cast your Eyes for
 “ a Moment on the Consequences of what is
 “ proposed, and fear not to take as Examples,
 “ those unhappy Victims of the Corruption of
 “ the Age, those Girls whose very Names are
 “ offensive to Modesty. They began by yield-
 “ ing to the same Weakness that you would in-
 “ dulse. Doubt not of their having had at
 “ first the Aversion you feel for the State they
 “ are in ; the Men who seduced them made the
 “ same Pretensions to disinterested Passions, and
 “ to their being incapable of wounding their
 “ Delicacy ; they have dared to trust to their
 “ own Strength, when the only Method of
 “ Escape was by flying from the Danger ; and
 “ therefore by exposing themselves to it, they
 “ have fallen. These same Men, after having
 “ gratified their Passion, were surfeited with
 “ them ; and as they had taken the first Step in
 “ Vice, as their Souls, before so pure, became
 “ accustomed to the Shame of Guilt and Self-
 “ reproach, their Crimes were multiplied :
 “ They soon knew no Gradations in Vice,
 “ and necessarily fell into the most dishonourable
 “ Sink of Infamy : And you, my Daughter,
 “ you whose Innocence and Candour I am bet-
 “ ter acquainted with than any one else ; you
 “ who have always made so great a Scruple of

“ the least Matter that might injure your Re-
 “ putation ; you, in a Word, who have a Soul
 “ so pure, a Heart so upright, you, I say, may
 “ make this first Step to a Libertinism so con-
 “ trary to your Principles. You would then
 “ no longer dare to lift up your Eyes to any
 “ Person worthy of Esteem ; you would not
 “ dare to fix them on yourself : For, my dear
 “ Friend, that Principle within us that is the
 “ Judge of our Actions, is a Gift that springs
 “ even from the Source of all the Virtues.
 “ From hence we condemn it with the greater
 “ Severity, because we cannot conceal from it
 “ the Degree of Consent we have given to our
 “ Faults : And as soon as the Voice of Con-
 “ science is stifled, as soon as we cease to re-
 “ spect ourselves, we no longer respect either
 “ the Public, or Manners, or Laws : And such
 “ is the Misfortune of whoever fails in the prin-
 “ cipal Rules of her Duty, and the first Virtue
 “ of her Sex, that she at once sinks down into
 “ Vice : Heaven no longer takes charge of her
 “ Punishment here, that is referred to Men,
 “ and frequently an infamous Death is the
 “ Period to which the first Deviations lead.
 “ What a Difference between this, and the
 “ Life you ought to embrace, and which this
 “ Day you were to enter upon !”

Mr.

Mr. *le Franc* at last painted the Advantages I should meet with in a Cloister with the same Force as he had done the Misfortunes I had Reason to expect in the World ; and concluded with asking me what was my last Resolution. “ To renounce every thing that can bind me to the World, where I cannot stay without Guilt, said I in a firm Tone ; and to consecrate myself for ever to the Service of the Poor.” He then asked me what he should do with the Letter, when I desired him to burn it, that I might have nothing left capable of making me relapse into a Weakness that had already cost me so many Tears.

I now resumed an Air of Tranquillity and Satisfaction : Mrs. *de la Chaise* re-entered the Room, and I prepared to set out with the best Grace in the World. When I was ready to go, *Angelica* came again to speak with me in private, but I only let her know that I had put the Letter into Hands that would make a proper Use of it ; and would hear nothing more upon that Subject.

As soon as I arrived at the *Hotel Dieu*, my Conductor presented me to the Superior, and drew us both to a Corner of the Parlour, where

where he told me, that he thought it necessary to acquaint that Lady with the Subject of our last Conversation, and asked my Consent. I readily agreed to it; and the Superior being informed, promised not to suffer any body to see me that came from him. I was then ordered to describe him we were speaking of, that she might know him if he made any attempt to see me, and this was the last Time I was permitted to speak of him. My Aunt, who in the Morning had looked upon this as a Party of Pleasure, now embraced me with many Tears, the same Day I entered into the Functions of my new State.

What a Spectacle was presented before me! This House assembles together at the same Time, whatever is most great and most humbling to Human Nature. There acute Distempers, and Women in the Agonies of Child-birth; here mortal Wounds, dreadful Accidents, cruel Operations, and further still, pestilential Diseases; in short every thing pointing out the Misery of our Condition. Ye Fair who idolize your own Persons, go thither and mortify your Vanity: Ye Philosophers who are hard and insensible, ye who are rich and feel no Pity for the Unfortunate, go there and learn the Sentiments of Humanity; perhaps the Representation

tation of so many Sufferings may open your Hearts to Compassion. When we consider such a Multitude of the Unhappy, when we see the Greatness of those Miseries with which they are afflicted, can we help being filled with Gratitude for our own Ease and Comforts ? Can we avoid trembling at the Thought, that we ourselves are subject to the same Misfortunes ? or while we are led to make these Reflections, help reaching out our Hand, to give them Assistance and Comfort ?

But amidst Objects so capable of inspiring us with Humiliation, how many others shall we find that make us recollect all the Grandeur and Excellence of our Natures ! I saw flying to the Assistance of these unfortunate Creatures, Girls filled with Courage and Magnanimity, who seemed superior to the State of Humanity. Nothing is capable to check their Zeal, or oppose the Sentiments of their religious Pity. Neither the Happiness they had Reason to expect in the World, nor the Fatigues of the Life they have embraced, nor the Meanness or Loathsomeness of their Employment, can shake their Courage : Without murmuring, nay with Pleasure, they suffer the Rigour of the Institution, the Severity of Superiors, the Impatience and Ingratitude even of those they Succour. Their Re-
pose,

pose, their Health, their Life itself, are of no value when necessary for the Preservation of the Objects entrusted to their Care. A Sacrifice so much the greater as they are not supported by the Hope of any Reward from Mankind. A Soldier braves the Approach of Death, a Man of Learning devotes his Life to Study, an Artist consecrates his Labours to the Perfection of his Art ; but all these have Glory for their Object and their Reward ; all hope to possess a large Share in the Imagination of other Men ; and this Advantage, how chimerical soever it may appear, carries them forward, encouraging and enabling them to accomplish great Things. But how superior to all this is the Resolution of these generous Girls ? They practise the most difficult Virtues, devote their Lives to the Performance of the most mortifying Services, and chuse the most rigorous Life, in the Certainty of being forgot by all the World, and in a continual Forgetfulness of themselves : What Magnanimity ! Is it not an Honour to have Creatures like ourselves capable of such heroic Efforts ? Who would not desire to imitate them, and will not this Imitation be productive of Happiness to ourselves ? Such were my Reflections on this Occasion.

For

For three Months I tasted all the Sweets, that a Life of Innocence, Labour and Peace could procure. Tho' my Health suffered greatly by it, the most painful and mortifying Labours did not discourage me. Peace of Soul and inward Satisfaction were my constant Reward.

The Remembrance of Mr. *de Maisencourt* at first gave me some uneasiness; but soon I thought of him only as of a worthy Man, whose Merit would have been sufficient to justify in the Eyes of the World, the Regard any Woman might feel for him.

He had several times attempted to see and speak to me, and one Day found the Means of penetrating even to the Place where I was employed; and to facilitate his Access, had given his Hand to a Woman of Quality who came to visit the Poor. The Superior knew him; as for me, the Sound of his Voice reached my Ears, and I durst not at first turn my Head to the Place from whence it came. As soon as he approached, the Superior ordered me to retire.

“ And as for you, Sir, if you have any Esteem
 “ for this Girl, said she, or if you are an honest
 “ Man, you will cease to follow her, and not

“ come

“ come here till the Day when she will pronounce her Vows : If I see you here again, you will oblige me to turn you out.” He appeared so disconcerted, that I could only hear him utter some unconnected Words, which doubtless let the Lady he waited on know, that he was not led thither from a Motive of Piety.

I ought to confess that I had believed myself stronger than I really was ; I could not resist the Temptation of turning my Head to look at him as I went away, and I found that I could not yet see him with Impunity. This Event gave my Mind an Uneasiness which I found great Difficulty in calming, and made me sensible of the Necessity of hastening the Time of my taking the Veil : I even desired the Superior to let me speak to Mrs. *de la Chaise* as seldom as possible, that I might avoid every Thing that might tend to open a Wound that was but imperfectly closed.

The Religious and Superiors of the Convent resolved, before they would suffer me to take the Veil, to make the Inquiries usual in the like Case, relating both to my Family and my Behaviour, and I waited the Result of these Informations with the Uneasiness a Person always

ways feels who dreads the Disappointment of her Hopes : However, I endeavoured to comfort myself with the Reflection that I had a Conscience void of Reproach. But how great was my Sorrow and Amazement, when the Superior, some Days after, entered my Cell, and said ; “ Prepare for the dreadful Proof
 “ Heaven is going to put you to : I know the Fer-
 “ vour of your Vocation ; but Providence op-
 “ poses the Accomplishment of your Desires. On
 “ the Informations we have engaged some Gen-
 “ tleman worthy of Credit to take, we have been
 “ informed, that your Mother has lived in a dis-
 “ orderly Manner, and that she has left her
 “ Husband to live with another Man ; your
 “ Father is an irregular Person ; Mrs. *de la*
 “ *Chaise* is a kept Mistress ; you were brought
 “ to her House at Midnight, and Mrs. *de*
 “ *Launay* complains that you have disturbed the
 “ Peace of her Family. On this Report being
 “ made, we assembled, and nobody has dared
 “ to propose your Admission. The whole
 “ Community are edified by your Conduct,
 “ we are persuaded that you would make a very
 “ worthy Nun ; but at the same Time we are
 “ obliged to maintain our Character with the
 “ Public. Our Rules, our Regard to Decency,
 “ and the Care of our Reputation, forbid our
 “ taking into the House one who has had such
 “ bad

“bad Examples. You are allowed to stay till
 “to-morrow Morning.” She then left me
 without waiting for my Reply.

I remained fixed and motionless; the Excess of my Grief for some Moments deprived me of the Power of Sensation, and my Soul was overwhelmed by the Weight of my Misfortunes. I however found a Ray of Comfort dart into my Soul when I recollected, that notwithstanding the Excess of my Affliction, I had no Reason to think that I had deserved this Treatment. I have nothing to reproach myself with, said I, and therefore am not so unhappy as I might be. Poverty, Affronts, and the Injuries of Fortune, may surely be supported when they are not attended with Remorse. But what will become of me?—I durst not fix my Attention on this Idea; it presented nothing but the most terrifying Images. I could see nothing besides Guilt, Shame, and Reproach, that was capable of drawing me out of the Abyss into which I was plunged. Great God, cried I, is it possible for thee to permit a virtuous Woman to be forced to abandon her Virtue? No, thou wilt send me the Relief which thou now concealest from me, in order to render me more worthy to receive it.

These

These gloomy Reflections employ'd my Mind till the next Day, when I resolved to go to Mrs. *de la Chaise*, and ask her to give me shelter, tho' I was at the same Time under the greatest Uncertainty whether she would grant my Request. Her Surprize on seeing me was extremely great. I made her acquainted with the Reasons that had prevented my being suffered to take the Veil; to which she replied by reproaching my Parents.

“ What would you have me do with you? added she; your Mother has publicly declared that I had you in my House only to make an Advantage of your Charms: You must be sensible of the Injury such Calumnies are capable of doing me. I would assist you still with all my Heart; but you yourself see that I cannot do it without furnishing her with a new Pretence for injuring my Character.”

“ I should be sorry, replied I, to give you the least Uneasiness; but, dear Aunt, consider that I had never such Need of your Friendship, and take pity on my unhappy Condition. You know as well as I, that I can hope for no Assistance from my Sister, and that my other Relations have it not in their Power to give it me: I durst not have Recourse to Mr. *le Franc*; for the Dukes of *** and he are certainly prejudiced against me, on account

“ of

“ of my being turned out of the *Hotel Dieu* ;
 “ you are then my only Resource, and if you
 “ abandon me, what will become of me ? ”

“ Am I more obliged to help you than your
 “ own Family ? replied she ; your Father has an
 “ Apartment in the Suburbs, let him give you
 “ a Chamber and a Bed, and then I shall be
 “ secured from your Mother’s injurious Re-
 “ proaches. While you are there I’ll look out
 “ for a Chambermaid’s Place for you ; for that
 “ is the only one you can henceforward ex-
 “ pect.”

“ But, added I, with a Heart stupefied with
 “ Grief, if my Father should refuse to give me
 “ shelter, where am I then to go ? ” “ That
 “ there may be no Difficulty on that Head, re-
 “ plied my Aunt, I will give you an Order on
 “ my Upholsterer, for him to furnish you with
 “ a Bed.” I durst not insist any further, but
 having returned her Thanks, I went to my Fa-
 ther’s, who consented that I should lodge in the
 same House with him, on Condition that he
 should neither be burthened with my Company,
 nor with finding me in Provisions ; for he him-
 self always eat abroad. I hoped that my Indu-
 stry would procure me Food ; but before I could
 work it was necessary that I should have some-
 thing

thing to work upon, and I had no Money to procure myself the Means of Employment.

I let my Aunt know this new Perplexity; when she permitted me to come and dine with her, whenever she was without Company. I could not conceal from myself the Mortification this necessarily gave me; and tho' I had been willing to overlook it, her Servants, who were informed of my Misery, and who were Witnesses of it, would have made me remember it: This was properly to beg my Bread. What a State was this for a Girl destined by her Birth to enjoy all the Elegances of Life! Whatever Inquiries were made to obtain a suitable Place for me, were all to no Purpose; no other Mistresses would accept of me than those in my Aunt's Station; and the honest Women refused to take me, as soon as I let them know that they were to inquire my Character of her.

Mr. *de Maisencourt* being informed by *Angelica* of my having left the Convent, I desired my Aunt not to engage him to come on the Days I was to be there; and accordingly the first Time I heard his Coach I retired out of Sight. He staid with her a considerable Time; but going at last, I went in again; when mentioning the Length of his Visit, my Aunt told

me that he had been giving her an Account of the new Persecutions he had suffered from his Uncle's teizing him to marry; that he had at last promised to submit; and that the Proofs of Averfion I had given him was the principal Motive that had determind him; that this Affair was soon to be concluded, that this alone employed him, and he no longer thought of me. What my Aunt told me, gave me a very vifible Uneafinefs, which ſhe ſtrove to increafe in order to be the more certain of the Situation of my Mind.

“ When I defired him not to come and fee
 “ me on the Days when you were here, added
 “ ſhe, with an ingenuous Air, he replied, that
 “ he was ready to obey me; but that this Pre-
 “ caution appeared very unneceſſary, ſince he
 “ was determined to think no more of you.”
 My Aunt ſaw that ſhe gave me the keenest Pain, and after a Moment's Pauſe proceeded,
 “ However, what you loſe on the one Side you
 “ gain on the other. Mr. *Dutertre*, ſince your
 “ leaving the Convent, has entertained a
 “ Friendſhip for you: Your Miſfortune has
 “ moved him, and he has not concealed his
 “ Regard for you: As I have let him know
 “ your Neceſſity, he has ordered me to buy for
 you

“ you immediately such Things as you want
 “ most.”

At this Moment Mr. *Dutertre* entered ; when
 Mrs. *de la Chaise* told him, that she had been
 letting me know the Regard he had for me.
 “ Are you not very happy Child, said he, putting
 “ his Hand under my Chin, to find one that
 “ pities your Misery ? What would have be-
 “ come of you, if you had not found one that
 “ would have obliged you gratuitously ? I keep
 “ here four or five rascally Footmen, and I was
 “ going to have one more, but I’ll freely give
 “ you what I should have laid out on him.
 “ I cannot indeed say so many fine Things to
 “ you, nor make you so many Compliments as
 “ *Maisencourt* ; but I can open my Purse,
 “ look’e. But what is most extraordinary, I
 “ only oblige you on Condition you do not
 “ take it in your Head to fall in Love with me :
 “ For I inform you before hand, that if you
 “ should grow fond, you would pay your Court
 “ but badly to your Aunt. Nay, but don’t
 “ look so disdainfully, added he, perceiving the
 “ Air with which I received his Prohibition,
 “ you are not the only Girl whose Heart I have
 “ softened.”

I had now too many Subjects of Reflection not to desire to be alone ; I therefore went away in good Time, in order to return to my Father's ; Mrs. *de Chaise* desiring me to come the next Day to go with her to buy what I wanted.

What, Mr. *de Maisencourt* going to be united to another, said I to myself, and I the Cause of his Indifference ! He loves me no more, and yet I feel that I never loved him so much. While I was examining these Ideas, I was no longer capable of smothering my Sighs and Tears, and I took so little Care of stifling them, that a Woman who lived next me came to comfort me, and offer me her Assistance. I thanked her for her Kindness, without opening my Door. My Despair now made less Noise ; but it was more violent. I despised Mr. *Dutertre* and his Benefits : I resolved to return no more to my Aunt's ; for I detested her for not undeceiving Mr. *de Maisencourt* ; I hated him ; I hated myself.

The next Day I persevered in my Resolution not to go to Mrs. *de la Chaise's* ; for every thing capable of diverting my Thoughts from the Subject of my Uneasiness, became odious to
me :

me: But as I had eat nothing since the Dinner of the Day before, I was towards the Evening so faint that I began to be affrighted; and calling the Woman who the preceding Day had offered me her Assistance, she went to get for me what she thought would be most nourishing; but on her Return, she found me lying senseless on the Bed. The Cries she gave at seeing me in this State brought me to myself, and I took some Nourishment, which she had the Generosity to give me, and at the same Time to refuse some of my Cloaths, which I would have given her, as an Acknowledgment for her Care. My Fainting was probably caused by the Excess of my Grief; for I had lived without Food on those Days when I did not go to my Aunt's: Could I suffer a harder Fate? My Father was sometimes many Days together without seeing me: The Study of Natural Philosophy, and more particularly some Experiments in Electricity, employed all his Care and Attention. He gave himself very little trouble about my wanting Necessaries: but frequently threatened that he would cause me to be shut up in Prison, if I ever followed my Mother's Example.

His Fondness for Experiments was so great, that he put every thing in practice, let the Cost be what it would, in order to gratify this rul-

ing Passion, and of this I had that Day a very afflictive Proof. He returned to the House, bringing with him an Upholsterer; and tho' he did not expect to find me there, that did not prevent his resolving to execute his Design. He ordered me in a blunt manner to get off the Bed I was sitting upon, for I had no other Seat; when seeing that I did not instantly obey him, he took me by the Arm, turned me out of the Room, and desired the Upholsterer to set a Price on the Bed, give him the Money, and carry it away. In vain did I urge that it was not ours; I was only answered by Threatenings.

Marianne, the Woman who had assisted me, was not yet gone home; but turned back, to add her Entreaties to mine; when finding that we were unable to prevail, she stopped the Upholsterer at the Street Door, and threatened him if he dared to stir with his Burthen. My Father endeavoured to drive her away, and gave her some Blows, which I could not hinder her receiving. She loaded both of them with Abuse, called the People to her Assistance, and protested that she would not let them carry any thing away. The Neighbours came running to discover what was the Matter; many of them had never seen me before; however, some of them having perceived me go in at Night and
out

out in the Morning, this suddenly determined the Standers-by to declare against me, by raising a Belief that I was my Father's Mistress. Prepossessed by this Opinion, they imposed Silence on her who espoused my Cause, and considered her as the Confidant of a Criminal Commerce. I might have thought myself happy had they carried their Injustice no farther: But some Persons, whom *Marianne* had displeased, declared that they would complain of her to the Police as a Woman who had introduced a young Person to my Father every Night.

I took these Menaces for abusive Speeches, uttered without any settled Intention; but they were more in earnest than I had imagined. The next Day the Commissary of that Quarter came to the House a Moment after my Father went out. Judge, Madam, what Terror a Visit of this Kind must give me. The rude Questions he put to me, his ironical Speeches, and ridiculous Jokes, surprized as much as they alarmed me. I trembled, and was disturbed at every Question; he took my Fears for a Proof of my Guilt, and declared that he would send me to St. *Martin's*, with the Woman, who, according to him, would do me a kind of Service that would be far from being agreeable. "Six Months Confinement, added he, by way of

“ Raillery, will make you recollect that Mr.
 “ *de Vermont* is not your Father. If you were
 “ his Daughter the Neighbours would know it.
 “ We have suffered such as you to go on so long
 “ that People are scandalized at it ; but as soon
 “ as you disturb the Peace, it’s our Rule to take
 “ Care of you.”

To what Distress did these Threatnings re-
 duce me ! I was ready to sink with Fear : How-
 ever, the Shame I felt at the Apprehensions of
 the Treatment they intended for me, gave me
 Courage, and I was forced by this dreadful Ex-
 tremity to implore the Protection of a Man
 whose Presence and Services I would forever
 have avoided. I therefore desired the Com-
 missary to permit me to send *Marianne* to Mr.
de Maisencourt’s, to engage him to come and
 declare that I had spoke nothing but the Truth.
 “ I must satisfy you, said he, tho’ it should
 “ only be to confound such an artful Hypo-
 “ crite. But tell me again your-family Name,”
 added he : I told it him. “ Right, I have
 “ Orders to arrest a Woman of that Name,
 “ cried he, on the Behalf of the President of
 “ * * * * ; she is doubtless your Mother, or
 “ some other Relation : Will an honest Man
 “ own any Body that belongs to such a Fa-
 “ mily ?”

This

This Discourse redoubled my Apprehensions of Mr. *de Maisencourt*'s not being found at home; and I was so taken up with the Horrors of my Situation, that I did not reflect on the disagreeable Office I was going to give him, by desiring him to interfere in an Affair so much beneath him. By this Time the House was surrounded with People.

My Apprehensions were at the Height when I heard a Coach stop at the End of the Street; Mr. *de Maisencourt* appeared, and Hope and Joy revived in my Heart. His Presence put a Stop to the Commissary's low Impertinence: He came with a grave and majestic Air, with Looks full of Assurance and Grief; these procured him the Respect of those who surrounded us, and they observed a strict Silence. He came up to me; while the Respect with which he spoke to me, shewed that I had not been guilty of Falshood. I told him in a few Words what had happened, when he had the Goodness to tell the Commissary that he would answer for me, and to desire me to follow him to his Coach; when I making some Difficulty of it; he said, " You need not be afraid to go with
 " me, you will find there Mrs. *de la Chaise*,
 " who was very uneasy at not having seen you
 " these two Days, and therefore came to my

“ House, just before you sent to inform me of
 “ this Affair, to know if I had heard any
 “ News of you. But I must not go, added he,
 “ without acknowledging and rewarding *Ma-*
 “ *rienne's* Services. I love a good Heart,
 “ wherever I find it.” She then experienced
 his Liberality ; he even desired her to call upon
 him, and told her that he would gladly serve
 her as soon as an Opportunity offered.

This Behaviour brought over the Mob to our
 Side, and the Event that was to have ended in a
 Manner so afflictive to me, became a kind of
 Triumph : For one can hardly give any other
 Name to the Manner in which the People con-
 ducted us with their Acclamations to the Coach.
 While the Commissary, probably fearing that I
 should complain of his Behaviour, attempted,
 while I was getting into the Coach, to hammer
 out some Excuses ; but I did not pay the least
 Attention to him, and this was the only Re-
 venge I thought proper to take.

Mrs. *de la Chaise* was under a mortal Uneasi-
 ness till we rejoined her. We went with her
 home, and while we were going I satisfied her
 Curiosity, by relating the Cause of the Event
 that had just happened.

When

When we were at Mrs. *de la Chaise's*, Mr. *de Maisencourt* told me, that how uncertain soever he was, whether this last Proof of his Affection would be as little agreeable to me as all those he had before given me, he could not refuse himself the Pleasure of returning Good for Evil. "It sometimes happens, I replied, that we suffer ourselves to be offended by a Behaviour which Circumstances have rendered indispensibly necessary; tho' her who is reproached for it has suffered in Proportion to the Pain she has given herself to prevent her observing an opposite Conduct."

"All that is flattering in this Answer, replied he, I can only attribute to the Gratitude you believe to be due to me; for it seems to agree so little with your forbidding me to come while you were here, that I can scarce tell how to reconcile such opposite Sentiments." "You are to blame, Sir, to reproach her for that, said Mrs. *de la Chaise*. "Any other but you would be pleased at such a Prohibition, since by that she lets you know that she is afraid of you. She would not avoid you if you were indifferent to her. But you will have Time enough to come to an Explanation, since I shall keep her till we can find some Method of living for her: I

“ believe after the Service, you have just done
 “ her, she won’t continue to forbid you the
 “ House.” “ I have never pretended, Madam,
 “ replied I, to drive from your House those
 “ who were agreeable to you ; but have thought
 “ myself extremely happy in being suffered to
 “ come here.”

We deferred going to buy what I had occasion
 for till the next Day, when we were to consider
 of the Measures to be taken to procure me a
 more tranquil Situation. I then saw myself ex-
 posed anew to the Sollicitations of the Man I
 loved, and would have fled from ; and it seemed
 as if the Uneasiness I was under was an Inti-
 mation of the Danger to which I was going to
 be exposed.

We were for several Days employed about
 my Dress ; and tho’ I would only accept of a
 neat and plain Dishabille, Mrs. *de la Chaise*,
 who forelaw the new Advantages Cloaths would
 give me over her, placed her principal Attention
 in purchasing such as would make me appear to
 the greatest Disadvantage. She bought the most
 disagreeable Head-dress, a dark Stuff, and a
 pair of ill-made Stays, and in short tried every
 Method to disfigure me ; but I so happily made
 use of that industrious Care, by which Women
 make

make every thing turn to their Advantage, that what was done with a View to make me ugly, seemed as if it had been designed for a contrary Use. Ought I not to reproach myself for the Pleasure I took in putting on this Dishabille for the first Time?

I was now admitted to the Rank of Mrs. *de la Chaise's* Companion, which Mr. *Dutertre* observing, insisted upon my having a genteel full Dress, and every thing suitable to it; and at the same Time threw upon the Table a Purse filled with Gold; telling my Aunt that she might take out of it what was proper to enable me to make a genteel Appearance.

When I reflected on the Liberality of a Man who had no apparent Reason for bestowing it on me, I was disturbed at his Motives, and sometimes expected there being some Mystery in it which I could not fathom; at other Times I attributed it to his great Wealth that allowed him to serve me, without his being put to the least Inconvenience. But though I always found something humbling in his Benefits, I cannot deny my being so vain as to feel a great Delight from the Prospect of being genteelly Drest. What a Difference was there between these Sensations, and those I brought with me

from the *Hotel Dieu* ! A Proof of the Heart being capable of the most unaccountable Changes and Contradictions.

It was agreed, that the first Day I wore my new Suit, we were to go with Mr. *de Maisencourt* to the Feast of *St. Cloud*. I had never yet seen any thing of that Kind ; but notwithstanding all they told me of the Cascade and Fountain, I must confess that my Attention was more freely led to observe the Company I found there. That is, my Vanity was more excited than my Curiosity ; and this Party of Pleasure was taken on as fine a Day as could be desired.

When we were in the Walks leading from the Park, my Aunt bid me several Times walk before with Mr. *de Maisencourt* ; but I was in no Haste to obey her Orders ; because I would have avoided hearing what I plainly saw he had a Desire to say to me ; but as he perceived it, he had the Address to make me enter into his Views without my having any thing to object.

“ Mind what she says, Miss, said he, your being so near is no Advantage to Mrs. *de la Chaise*, it makes her appear only tolerably agreeable ; and therefore whatever dislike you may have to go with me, it should not hinder your having some Complaisance for
 “ her

“ her Humour.” “ You are always talking
 “ to me of dislike, cried I, advancing some
 “ Steps; and yet are not ignorant that I never
 “ had any to you; but it is not decent for me
 “ to walk with you alone; nor for us to hold
 “ a private Conversation. How so? replied
 “ he with Vivacity. You will still be under
 “ your Aunt’s Eye; she will be a Witness to
 “ all our Actions.” “ Will she be so of your
 “ Discourse?” added I casting down my Eyes.
 “ If she was of the Sentiments you inspire me
 “ with, said he with an Air of Tenderneſs,
 “ how would ſhe hate you! ’Tis true, ſhe is
 “ not abſolutely ignorant of them; but ſhe is
 “ very far from believing them ſo paſſionate as
 “ they are”—“ Suppoſing theſe Sentiments were
 “ ſuch as you ſay, replied I, I would believe
 “ her ſo much my Friend as not to diſapprove
 “ them.”—“ You muſt know the contrary,”
 “ purſued he; you can’t be ignorant that where-
 “ ever ſhe is, ſhe would have us neither have
 “ Eyes, Hearts, or Reſpect, for any but her-
 “ ſelf; and you are capable of robbing her of
 “ all theſe Advantages.” I could not avoid
 giving him a Look in which was painted all my
 Gratitude; for a Woman even when ſhe ſin-
 cerely ſtrives againſt the Impreſſions made by a
 Lover, gives him, with the ſame Sincerity,

Proofs

Proofs of her not being insensible either to his
Praises or his Sentiments."

"What Reason have I to be sorry, added
"Mr. *de Maisencourt* with a Sigh, for my hav-
"ing seen you in this State! Hitherto you have
"let me know the Power which Candour and
"natural Graces have over the Heart: To Day,
"without losing any of these Advantages, you
"make me sensible of that which a noble Pre-
"sence, a ravishing Shape, and an Air of
"Grandeur gives, Attractions that render even
"your Pride amiable." Was I not in the right?
"said I, with an Air of Perplexity; I was not
"mistaken in thinking you would abuse a par-
"ticular Conversation, by making it serve to
"amuse yourself at my Expence." "Amuse
"myself! said he, with a Look that passed even
"to my Heart: Oh how little do you know
"the Nature of that Enchantment you have
"wrought! but in order to distinguish Things
"like these, you ought to be capable of Love."
"What always unjust, cried I, fretfully; I be-
"gin to think that you make me these Re-
"proaches, only to have a fuller Assurance that
"I deserve them perhaps but too little; but
"tho' I had the Sentiments you seem to desire,
"whether would they lead me? I cannot carry
"my Views up to you; you are not at Liberty
"to

“ to place me in a State that would do honour
 “ to me; and I should think myself unworthy
 “ of your Esteem, you would be even unworthy
 “ of mine, if you had Designs on me which
 “ Virtue and Honour would not justify.”

“ What, replied he hastily, do you see no
 “ Medium between these two Extremes? Since
 “ you yourself know that I am not at Liberty
 “ to follow the Inclinations of my Heart, can-
 “ not you form an Idea of a State capable of
 “ recompensing me for this Privation, without
 “ finding any thing in it hurtful to you? Can
 “ you not form an Idea of a pure, delicate, in-
 “ nocent Connection between two Persons of
 “ different Sexes? Are you not sure of your-
 “ self; are you not so with respect to me? Can
 “ you reproach yourself for any thing that has
 “ pass’d between us since I have loved you?
 “ What Danger do you see then in staying with
 “ Mrs. *de la Chaise*, and in permitting me to
 “ come there to pay you my Respects?”

“ But, Sir, said I, the Felicity I enjoy at pre-
 “ sent must not always last; I can place but little
 “ Dependence on my Aunt; and my Circum-
 “ stances are so disproportioned to my Appear-
 “ ance, that I know not how I have been able
 “ to consent to accept of so many Ornaments; but

“ Motives

“ Motives which I should doubtless conceal from
 “ myself, have made me pass over such just and
 “ rational Considerations.” I blush’d at finishing
 these Words, and turned my Head to look where
 Mrs. *de la Chaise* was. Mr. *de Maisencourt* per-
 ceived that I regretted my having said what had
 just escaped me, and eagerly replied, “ How
 “ happy should I be to know these secret Mo-
 “ tives, which you would conceal even from
 “ yourself ! I am ignorant what it is that makes
 “ me so passionately desire to know them.”
 “ That is because you probably guess, that they
 “ are not unfavourable to you,” said I, stop-
 ping to wait for my Aunt.

He now repeated his Entreaties with such
 Warmth, and threw so much Passion into his
 Expressions, that I at last said, “ If nothing but
 “ that will satisfy you, I have consented to suf-
 “ fer myself to make this Appearance, that you
 “ might have less Reason to blush at your
 “ Choice ; I would render myself more worthy,
 “ at least in Appearance, of the Respect of a
 “ Man like you.”

Mr. *de Maisencourt* could not conceal the
 Transport of Joy with which he was filled by my
 Answer ; but seizing my Hand, he kiss’d it with
 Ardour ; which my Aunt perceiving, called out,
 “ Young

“ Young Folks, don't walk so fast.” I chid him for what he had done while we waited for her coming up ; and was indeed as much disconcerted, as if I had been guilty of a considerable Fault ; and indeed I had committed a very great one, since I had discovered my Weakness to the very Man from whom I ought to have hid it with the greatest Care.

Mr. *de Maisencourt* was bantered for this Action in such a Manner, as prevented his being guilty of it again ; while I resolved to walk with Mr. *Dutertre*, tho' at the Hazard of being obliged to suffer by the Rudeness of his Jokes. We soon arrived at the Place where we were to see the Water-works ; when I, for the first Time, found myself one of the Objects that fixed the Attention of a Swarm of those gay and giddy Coxcombs, who, in one and the same Day, are at every Place of Diversion. These ogled me unmercifully ; but Mr. *de Maisencourt* perceiving, that what fixed the Attention of a Number of these pretty Fellows upon me, was my being unhappy in the Company of a Woman of ill Fame ; he gave me the Hint ; and under the Pretence of seeing better, we suffered several Persons to come in between her and me. On which I really found, that as soon as they thought I did not belong to her, the Looks they cast at me were less injurious.

rious. How would this have added to my Vanity, if any thing had been capable of encreasing that which had been inspired by him of whose Approbation I was alone sensible !

However, on my entering into my Apartment in the Evening, I could not avoid making some Reflections on myself. What Changes have happened in my Situation, said I, in the Space of a Month ! From the most peaceful State, I pass'd into a Life filled with Trouble ; into an extreme Poverty, that reduced me to the most deplorable Wretchedness ; from whence I find myself suddenly raised to Opulence. But what Reflections arose in my Mind, when I compared the Purity of my Soul, while I was exposed to so many Misfortunes, with the Emotions of Vanity, and the Proofs of Weakness I had Reason to reproach myself with, since my State was rendered easy ! Is the being attached to the Advantages of Fortune, said I, incompatible with inward Peace and Tranquility of Soul ? Scarce was I happy when I became vain and guilty. My Misfortunes had not been able to lead me to one Action that called for Self-reproach ; but a Moment of Prosperity became to me a Source of Regret. Other Ideas still added to my Torment.

While

While I, said I to myself, live in Ease and Tranquility, perhaps my Mother feels the most pressing Want: 'Tis true she has failed in her Duty to me; she has failed in her Duty to God and herself; but she is unhappy; she is my Mother; and what more valuable Title can she have to my Pity? As Mr. *Dutertre* has so readily parted with a considerable Sum, why may he not put himself to the same Expence to succour the Unhappy? I was then ignorant, that those who are thought the most generous Men are frequently only so thro' Ostentation, and a Desire of performing what they imagine will do them Honour.

From this Time two Things engaged my whole Attention; the Care of searching for my Mother, and that of avoiding as much as possible a Man who every Day became more and more dangerous. I began with taking all the necessary Measures for procuring the first of these Advantages; and hoped for the other from the Prudence and Circumspection with which I resolved to behave to Mr. *de Maisencourt*.

But at the Moment when we least expected it, one of my Aunt's Friends came to inform us that she had found an agreeable Place for me; and that she had mentioned me to the Lady, who desired I should come immediately. She assured

assured me that I should be rather the Lady's Companion than her Woman, and that the Place would become extremely lucrative, since the Master of the House had lately gained a Law-suit, by which he had obtained an Estate that brought him in sixty thousand Livres a Year.

The Things we have most desired frequently happen when we are grown indifferent, and sometimes averse to them. This News, which some Days before I should have received with Joy, threw me into a Consternation, the Cause of which I could not at first well discover. I began to enjoy a State of Ease and Tranquillity, and it seemed hard to change it so soon for that of a Servant. I was not insensible, that these Promises of treating a Girl as a Companion, generally produce none of the Advantages with which Girls are apt to flatter themselves; and that they are not the less subject to the Caprices, the Humour, and frequently to the Ill-treatment of a Mistress, who has seldom the Generosity not to put them in mind of the most humbling Circumstances belonging to their Station. On the other hand, I thought that Mr. Dutextre's benevolent Disposition might be of no long Continuance. Besides, the Uneasiness I was under, with respect to the Motive of the Services I received, was alone capable of rendering them dis-

disagreeable to me, and making my Situation very unsatisfactory.

To these Reflections I added some relating to Mr. *de Maisencourt*. Here is, said I, the best Opportunity that could be offered me for my delivering myself from the Addresses of a Man whom I ought to dread. Can I flatter myself with not yielding at last to my own Inclinations, if I should continue in a State that will admit of his having the Liberty of seeing me every Moment, and of speaking of his Passion without Opposition?—But would not he disdain me, as soon as he saw me a Servant? Would he then continue to love me? He would not dare to justify to his own Mind the Inclination he would feel for me: As soon as a Man is forced to blush at his Choice, he renounces it without Delay: I would fly from him, but not in such a Manner as would expose me to the Danger of losing his Heart. In the mean while, what Reason have I to fear his Affiduities, and the Complaisance of my Aunt, who gives him every Opportunity of seeing me alone? Oh doubtless there is a Plot laid between them! I will fly from this pressing Danger: Heaven offers me the Means of Deliverance, what Reason should I have to reproach myself if I refused to lay hold of it!

This

This Resolution was still strengthened by Mr. *de Maisontouri*'s Endeavours to persuade me to abandon it; and as his and Mrs. *de la Chaise*'s Entreaties only served to fortify my Suspicions, I went the next Day and entered myself a Servant to Mrs. *Desbordes*.

Her Husband had been employed in providing Forage for the Army in the last War; and as he had always but a small Fortune, the Law-suit he had gained a few Months before, made him suddenly pass from very indifferent Circumstances to the Possession of great Wealth, which his Wife resolved to make use of in such a Manner, as to procure whatever would give her an Air of Dignity and Splendor. Mr. *Desbordes* was a Man possess'd of great Wisdom; he was of an even condescending Temper; of a benevolent Disposition; and extremely fond of ancient Customs, which he sometimes carried perhaps to a ridiculous Extreme; but in all other Respects he was a Man of plain good Sense; and was willing, while he enjoy'd the Conveniences of Life, to avoid Ostentation, and a Profusion of Expence. His Wife was not altogether of his Sentiments; he had granted her one waiting Woman, she had taken two: It was the same with regard to the Footmen; and she absolutely insisted on having an Equipage to herself.

herself. Her Husband carried his Complaisance so far, as to promise her that his Coach should be her's alone; and that he would be contented with walking on Foot, as he had hitherto done.

Mrs. *Desbordes* was past the Prime of Youth, and was the only Person who did not perceive it; for she still valued herself on her Beauty. She continually made use of Entreaties with her Husband, to engage him to suffer her to lay on the *Rouge*; against which he incessantly de-claimed. Friends were employed to convince him of the Injustice of opposing a Thing authorized by Custom. It was represented as an Indecency for a Woman with an Equipage to want this artificial Bloom on her Cheeks, since without it she might be taken for a Chambermaid. Mr. *Desbordes* did not however suffer himself to be convinced by the Solidity of such Reasons; he pretended, that having loved his Wife for twenty Years with the Colours Nature had bestowed, he had the Courage to love her still for the rest of his Life, while she appeared in the same Manner; and notwithstanding the Pains that were taken, he always persisted in maintaining his Sentiments no less than his Wife did, in giving him frequent Occasion to dispute the Subject; she mended her Complexion, and gave herself very little Disturbance
about

about the Coolness of his Behaviour ; while Mr. *Desbordes* following the Example of the more sensible Sort of Husbands, finding himself unable to conquer, became accustomed to red, and said no more about it.

I owe however this Justice to Mrs. *Desbordes*, that she was not naturally what any one would have imagined from Appearances. She unhappily delivered herself up to the Advice of a Viscountess, with whom she had lived at the Time when the Law-suit was depending. Her Foible was to adore all who had a Court Air, and a Title of Quality. The Viscountess therefore, whose Affairs were in a very bad Situation, took Advantage of this Weakness, in order to govern her ; and under the Pretence of learning her whatever was polite and in Taste, filled her Head with Chimeras and false Notions.

As soon as the Viscountess knew that Mr. *Desbordes* had gained his Suit, she sent for a Nephew she had in *Provence*, and made him enter one of the Companies of Musquetiers. He had been three Months in *Paris*, and it was pretended that in this short Time he had acquired the Art of distinguishing himself in the politest Company. Mrs. *Desbordes* gave her Friend an Apartment in the House, and she did not fail to share it with her Relation. The
Chevalier

Chevalier behaved in the Family without the least Ceremony ; and as he was a young Man and a Musquetier, spoiled by the Indulgence of his Aunt, and that Freedom or rather Levity in Mrs. Desbordes's Behaviour, which she indulged from her being taught to believe that it was the Height of good Breeding, it could not be expected that he should pay any Regard to the Rules of Decorum. His most extravagant Sallies, were all Flights of Wit, and all his Frolics the Proofs of a Mind too great to be confined within the narrow Limits of Order and Decency ; he therefore lived with my Mistress in the greatest Familiarity, entered her Apartment at all Hours, received Lessons from her Masters, and sometimes attended when she was dressing at her Toilet, in the Presence of the Servants, or those who might be unexpectedly there. 'Tis true he did not want Sense, his Follies proceeded from Self-sufficiency, and a wrong Education.

One Night, when I had been putting my Mistress to Bed, and was leaving the Room, the Chevalier and the Viscountess were passing by the Door. This Lady stopped me to ask some Questions, and while she was speaking, I observed that the Chevalier fell into a deep Revery, on his fixing his Eyes upon me with
great

great Marks of Attention : I began to be disturbed at his Looks ; when throwing himself on one Knee, he begged a thousand Pardons for the Injustice he had done my Charms, in not having paid that Attention to them which they deserved. “ But if any thing can excuse me, added he, it is my never before having had the “ Happiness of seeing you in a Night cap, and “ in this enchanting Disorder. Ah ! Aunt, “ my dear Aunt, allow me to make before you, “ a Confession of the most tender Love it is “ possible for a Man to feel : A Love so much “ the more violent, as it is the Effect of Nature, destitute of all the Assistance of Art : “ Confess, Madam, that you never saw such “ Eyes, such a beautiful Skin, so lovely a “ Complexion, and a Hand, an Arm.—O she “ is all ravishing !”

I was so stunned with this Piece of Extravagance, that I knew not what to reply. I strove to snatch away my Hand which he held in his, when flying from him, I told the Viscountess that if she did not render him more circumspect in his Behaviour to me, I would complain to my Mistress.

This Menace suddenly rendered him calm and respectful, and he desired me in the most pressing Manner carefully to conceal from Mrs. Desbordes
the

the Passion I had inspired him with, and to believe that he would constantly have all the Respect for me that I deserved.

In order to render my Situation as agreeable as it was possible to be in these Circumstances, I found the Means of getting Mr. *de Maisencourt* acquainted with the Viscountess, and from the Hints I gave him, he soon rendered himself agreeable to the whole Family. As soon as it was possible for me to have a Moment's Conversation with him, whatever was disagreeable in my Station was softened. A Glance of his Eyes, or even the Knowledge of his being under the same Roof with me, was sufficient to render me contented. It was doubtless disagreeable to him to see the Object of his Choice in such Circumstances! What Gratitude therefore did I feel for his continuing to love me in spite of the Humiliation of my present State? I shall never forget the Address with which he made me accept his Picture, under the Pretence of returning a Pocket Glass he took from me. I thought myself obliged to inform him of the singular Declaration I had received from the Chevalier, and he gave me his Advice how to behave if he persisted in his Folly, and I had frequently an Occasion to make use of it. Indeed I had need of a great deal of Patience, to

bear all the ridiculous Things he said to convince me of his Passion : When I wanted to get rid of him, I threatened to complain to Mrs. *Desbordes*; but he feared her Anger less than her discharging me, which would infallibly happen on her being informed of his Behaviour.

The Passion he had conceived for me prevented his staying a Moment with my Mistress when I was not with her; and he even made use of every Pretence to have me called, or to go and search for me ; by which means Mrs. *Desbordes*, who was fond of his Company, began to have some Suspicion of the Truth, and at first mentioned it in jest ; but finding that he persisted, she threatened to turn me away.

The Manner in which the Viscountess and her Nephew lived, at length grew very disagreeable both to my Master and Mistress ; and the latter finding that they had imposed upon her Credulity, and under the Pretence of teaching her how to behave like a Person of Quality, had frequently made her ridiculous, they both began to treat them with more reserve. Mrs. *Desbordes* was one Day indisposed, and the Chevalier coming in, and behaving with his usual forward Impertinence, she ordered him to leave the Room. On which he replied, “ Madam is in
her

her Airs, I will go and meet a Friend I left in the Garden." He went out ; and I undrest my Mistress, and put her to bed ; when she ordered me to go and tell the Chevalier that he must not disturb her.

I went therefore to search for him in the Garden, where he was walking with a young Musqueteer of his own Age. " Egad, said his Friend on seeing me ; if you will take the Mistress, I will take the Servant ; for faith she's a genteel Girl." The Chevalier opposed him by saying, that I was a Girl worthy of Respect. " Respect ! added the other in an ironical Tone ; I fancy you are in jest ; Is not she Mrs. Desbordes's Woman ? Well, you shall see that I'll treat her like a Woman." On saying this he attempted to put his Hand into my Stays ; on which the Chevalier pushed him away from me with such Violence, that he had like to have been down, which he resented by some bitter Speeches. While they were quarrelling, I ran in order to make my Escape into the House ; but before I had reached the End of the Parterre, I heard the Clashing of their Swords : When the Servants instantly ran to separate them ; but did not reach them time enough to prevent the Chevalier's being wounded.

The whole House was in a Consternation at this Accident, and Mr. *Desbordes* seemed more concerned than any body else : All imaginable Care was therefore taken of the Chevalier ; and the most eminent Surgeons being called, they declared that the Wound was not mortal.

It was rightly judged that this Adventure would make a great Noise in the World, and that People would not fail to place it to the Account of Mrs. *Desbordes*. A Report was therefore industriously spread abroad of the Duel's being fought for one of Mrs. *Desbordes*'s Servants, and to render this more probable I was discharged.

However unjust I imagined this Proceeding, I could not leave the House without Regret. I had lived in a State of Tranquillity, sheltered from the Misfortunes I had Reason to apprehend ; I should have been too happy had I stay'd, but Heaven reserved me for new Trials.

THE



THE
S C H O O L
OF
W O M A N.

P A R T I I I .

AS I could not have the least Hope of Assistance from my Sister, whose Indifference for me had turned into a declared Hatred, on her learning the Attempt I had made on him whom she still kept closely confined, I was obliged to return to my ordinary Refuge; and Mrs. *de la Chaise* very readily promised to give me shelter. I now found myself exposed

anew to the Caprices of a Woman on whom I could scarcely venture to depend ; and to the Affiduity of a Man, who was so much the more dangerous from his treating me with all the Respect my Delicacy required.

I had always continued my Endeavours to discover the Place to which my Mother was retired ; and now with the Hope of giving her some Assistance, without being burthensome to any one, I conceived the Design to employ myself as a Milliner, and to lay out the little Money I had obtained by Service in purchasing Goods proper for this Trade. I hoped to be able by my Industry to maintain myself without any other Assistance, and to place my Mother in a less deplorable State than that I imagined she might be in.

The very Idea of this Scheme filled me with a Transport of Joy : I communicated it to my Aunt, suppressing only what concerned my Mother, on account of her hating her too much to approve what related to her. She adopted my Project with a Vivacity that astonished me ; for I could not then penetrate into her true Reasons : But it favoured, in the most admirable Manner, a Design she did not yet think proper to discover to me. I contracted a Habit of working with her ; and as what I employed myself

about

about was genteel and fashionable, there was no Impropriety in performing it before the Persons who came to visit her.

I pass'd few Days without seeing Mr. *de Maisencourt* ; but tho' his Visits were frequent, they did not give the least Distrust ; for he behaved with too much Circumspection for any one to suspect his Dispositions with respect to me. I was, however, sometimes tempted to reproach myself for suffering him to indulge his Passion ; but his Discourse was so discreet, his Endeavours to please me so respectful, that I could not find the least Pretence for avoiding his Company. The only Thing that disturbed me was the long private Conversations I saw him frequently hold with my Aunt ; and when I asked the Subject of them, he always replied, that he had been talking to her about me, to engage her to approve his assiduous Endeavours to please me, and to keep up the sincere Friendship she seemed to discover for me. I was obliged to be contented with these Reasons, tho' I was not entirely satisfied with them ; but it never entered my Thoughts, that in these Conversations they treated of such Things as were necessary to be concealed from me.

But the Tranquility I enjoy'd was soon disturbed, by Mrs. *de la Ghaize* admitting as a

Visitor a young Nobleman, who was just come out of the College. The first Merit she discovered in him, was his being struck with her Beauty; and indeed he himself was extremely amiable. This she asserted in the most rapturous Expressions; and the first Time I saw the young Count, I perceived that she had not exaggerated the Charms of his Person; for I never saw a finer Figure. His Looks were at the same Time lively, soft, and persuasive; and the Nobleness and Dignity of his Countenance sufficiently denoted his Birth and Education; while the only Fault I found in him, was an Air of Haughtiness and Disdain: But I have since found that he was extremely jealous of his Nobility, and thought he had a Right to despise a Number of Men of Quality who had more Merit than himself.

The Count, on his entering the Room, threw his Arms about Mrs. *de la Chaise's* Neck, while she lavished her Caresses and Praises on him. The Count's Vivacity had prevented his observing me; but at last he perceived me, and bowed with a more composed Air: When my Aunt cried, "Go and embrace my Neice; don't you think her amiable?" "Yes certainly," replied he, and immediately obey'd her. I observed that he regarded me with a
Look

Look of Attention ; that the Vivacity of his Manners diminished, and that he said nothing without watching how I received it. When he entered, his Gaiety had proceeded even to Folly ; but he now became more reserved. He had never been used to the Company of any other Women, besides those with whom his Father conversed ; who were fond of obstreperous Mirth, loose in their Manners, and but little circumspect in their Discourse. What Society for a young Man just entering into the World ! How many Fathers ruin their Sons by the same guilty Indiscretion in their own Conduct !

The Count soon perceived the Difference there is between such Women as these, and a young Woman whose modest and reserved Behaviour demands more Respect : And indeed there is no need of Experience to make a Person acknowledge the Empire which the mere Appearance of Virtue has over the Mind. He became more polite, he even endeavoured to please me, by rendering me all the little Services I might have occasion for ; and while free, even to Indecency, with my Aunt, he became respectful, the Moment he opened his Lips to me.

It was not long before she perceived his Manner of treating me ; when calling him, “ Come
“ hither, said she, several Times, in a fretful

“ Manner; come and sit by me : You must let
 “ Miss mind her Work, she is a poor Girl,
 “ and is obliged to make use of her Fingers.”

Tho’ I was perfectly persuaded that a Girl is not dishonoured by working, and that Industry did not render me the less worthy of Esteem, yet I could not help blushing at my Aunt’s laying open the Unhappiness of my Situation before a Man who I did not doubt was going to repent of his having treated me with the least Mark of Respect; and I was not deceived.
 “ That is rather your Fault than mine, replied
 “ he, looking at me with an easy unconcerned
 “ Air. How should I know that Mrs. *de la*
 “ *Chaise* had a Neice who was a Workwoman?
 “ To tell you the Truth, added he, making
 “ a low Bow in order to go away, I don’t chuse
 “ to be seen in such Company.” Thus the Count was as ridiculously puffed up with the Idea of his Birth, as he was ignorant of the Customs of the World, which allow Men of Quality to converse with all Ranks of Women without the least Injury to their Honour.

My Aunt did not fail to let me know the Vexation I had given her, and to inform me that I should bring a Disgrace on her House: She even made me believe, some Days after, that the Count’s Talk had given her old female Friends

a dislike to my Company. However accustomed she was to false Reasoning, she was very sensible of the Absurdity of this pretended Delicacy ; she nevertheless imitated those, who either thro' Interest or Vanity, flatter a World which they secretly despise ; and at the same Time neglect the Persons on whom they set the greatest Value. She told me that she had a higher Esteem for me than for all these People together ; but that she could not renounce the Pleasure of seeing them.

I easily understood what this meant, and promised never to appear when she had Company : And, besides, I imagined that she herself might be the Cause of the Aversion they discovered to being in my Company. These Women had frequently endeavoured to communicate to me the licentious Air of their Conversation, and a Relish for the Indecency that generally accompanied their Mirth ; but they found that I had such an Antipathy to what they said and did without the least Scruple, that I was become odious to them ; for we do not like the Society, or even the Neighbourhood, of a Person whose Manners are a continual Reproach. I condemned myself therefore to stay in my Chamber every Afternoon ; and indeed the only Thing that displeased me in this new Plan, was my
 3 being

being deprived of an Opportunity of seeing Mr. *de Maisencourt* so often as before.

But I did not stay long in this Situation; for they resolved to get rid of me entirely. They talked of a little Apartment to be let in the next House; my Aunt knew that it had several ornamental Pieces of Furniture belonging to it, and said one Day that they might furnish it for me by adding only half a Dozen Cane Chairs, and some Paper Hangings; that I was a Constraint upon Mr. *Dutertre* as well as her Companions, and that the wisest Course I had to take was to keep House by myself. The Solitude in which I was going to be placed filled me with Apprehensions; but I communicated the Project and my Fears to Mr. *de Maisencourt*, and asked his Advice; on which he replied, that since my Presence was a Restraint on those who interested themselves in my Happiness, I was not at Liberty to refuse the Offer that was made me, and that with respect to its being so disagreeable to me to live alone, it was a Difficulty that might be easily removed by my taking *Marianne*, from whom I had already received Marks of Affection, for my Servant; and on my saying that I was not in a Condition to keep her, my Aunt replied, that she would be at the whole Expence. Having no room to doubt but that
they

they would get rid of me at any Rate, I made no farther Objections. For several Days they employed themselves in buying Furniture, and then my Aunt and Mr. *Dutertre* conducted me to my new Abode. Every thing was neat and elegant ; and tho' the Apartment was small, it was extremely convenient, and well contrived.

As soon as I found myself alone, I was the happiest Woman in the World ; and above all Things I congratulated myself on my having escaped from the Society I had left. It is said that our Manners are formed by the Company we frequent ; but I have found by Experience, that in order to render this Maxim true, the Choice of this Company must be voluntary ; without this nothing can corrupt a Mind in which Virtue is deeply rooted : And when that is not the Case, Exámple is so far from corrupting, that it strengthens our Aversion to Vice, and makes us detest the Disorders we have it not in our Power to avoid seeing.

The first Time I saw Mr. *de Maisencourt* at my Aunt's, he was very merry with her and Mr. *Dutertre*, on their thus putting young Girls among their Moveables, and asked him whether he was jealous, and if he would permit him to come and see me. " You ought to ask
 " this Permission of me, Sir, said I ; and I an-
 " swer

“ fwer you beforehand, that I propofe to receive
 “ no Men at my Lodgings. “ That’s good,
 “ faid my Aunt, ridicule his foolifh Scruples.”
 “ They deferve to be laughed at, replied Mr.
 “ *Dutertre*, for I intend fometimes to go and
 “ Taffe her Soup.”—“ I have no right to
 “ forbid you, Sir, returned I ; but I am per-
 “ fuaded that you have too much Senfe, and are
 “ too jealous of my Reputation, to put this
 “ Defign in Execution. You muft be more
 “ fenfible than I am, Gentlemen, of the Injury
 “ I fhould receive from the Vifits of Perfons
 “ of your Rank.” “ Mifs is in the Right, faid
 “ Mr. *de Maifoncourt*, and I engage never to
 “ go to fee her without this Lady, and never
 “ without her Permilfion.”

He came in reality fome Days after with my
 Aunt and Mr. *Dutertre* ; but I obferved that
 while we were talking in my Apartment, he
 flipped into the Antichamber, where I faw
 him talking to *Marianne* with much Action.
 I feared left he fhould be endeavouring to gain
 her ; and this Idea made me the more uneasy,
 as I knew that ſhe was very much difpofed to
 ferve him.

As foon as they were gone I called her to me,
 to know what he had faid ; ſhe, at firft, made
 me

me only evasive Answers, which still encreased my Fears; but assuming a severe and threatening Voice, I protested that if she did not tell me the Truth, I would turn her away the next Day. She then burst into Tears, saying that she should disoblige the most worthy Man in the World, and that I was very much to blame to suspect his being guilty of any ill Design.

“ Since you will positively know it, added
 “ she, I will tell you all; but do you at least
 “ assure Mr. *de Maisencourt* that it was you that
 “ forced me to it. When he was talking so much
 “ to me, it was to repeat his Desire, that I would
 “ not tell you of Things that another Man would
 “ have boasted of. I have been many Times at
 “ his House, since he gave me leave to go, when
 “ he drew us out of the ugly Affair we were en-
 “ gaged in by the Calumnies of our Neighbours.
 “ I told him one Day by Chance, that your
 “ Father had been put in Prison for a Note of
 “ Hand, which he was unable to pay; on
 “ which Mr. *de Maisencourt* asked me, if I knew
 “ what Prison, and on my naming it, he de-
 “ fired me to carry the Money to the Keeper,
 “ and to order him, in his Name, to bring his
 “ Prisoner to him, that he in Person might en-
 “ quire into the Affair. This he did, and
 “ some Days after Mr. *de Vermont* was at his
 “ own

“ own House ; but very much altered. His
 “ Manner of Living had not agreed with him,
 “ and his Confinement was become the more
 “ terrible from his having performed in the
 “ Prison some Electrical Experiments, which
 “ had made the Jailors suspect that he prac-
 “ tised Magic ; for they could no otherwise
 “ account for his being able to draw Fire from
 “ all the Parts of their Bodies, and receiving
 “ violent Blows without being touched ; and on
 “ this Account they thought there was a Necessi-
 “ sity for his being more closely confined.
 “ The Difference there was between the Way
 “ in which Mr. *de Vermont* had just lived, and
 “ the Life he led at his being set at Liberty,
 “ threw him into a very dangerous Illness, on
 “ which the Neighbours talked of sending him
 “ to the *Hotel Dieu*. His Condition filled me
 “ with Compassion ; so that forgetting the Rea-
 “ son I had to hate him, I went to his Bene-
 “ factor to ask him for a Recommendation.

“ Mr. *de Maisencourt* forbid his being carried
 “ thither, ordered me to take Care of him,
 “ and told me that he would send him his Phy-
 “ sician, and take care that he should want for
 “ nothing.” I was so affected by these Instances
 of Generosity, that without thinking of what I
 did, I took the Hand of this Protectrice of the

Unhappy,

Unhappy, and kissed it a thousand Times. *Marianne* was so softened by this Action as to be unable to proceed ; but at last she continued :

“ When Mr. *de Vermont* was recovered, Mr.
 “ *de Maisencourt* bid me ask him what Employ-
 “ ment he was capable of discharging ; and
 “ the only Answer made by your Father was,
 “ that he was not made for working. I could not
 “ then help reproaching him with the miserable
 “ Manner in which he lived. He only asked
 “ me who was the Person that had delivered
 “ him from the Prison and the Grave. I gave
 “ Mr. *de Maisencourt* an Account of every thing,
 “ and I can’t help telling you, that I said, your
 “ Father did not deserve his Bounty.

“ No matter, said he, Mr. *de Vermont* is old,
 “ he was not brought up to work, and at the
 “ Bottom he is an honest Man ; it is a Mis-
 “ fortune to him, that his Thirst of Knowledge
 “ has been so inordinate as to ruin his Affairs :
 “ And it is not just that he should want the
 “ Necessaries of Life ; send me his Tradesmen,
 “ and I will give them such Orders as are ne-
 “ cessary to prevent it.

“ This was what Mr. *de Maisencourt* forbid
 “ my telling you when you saw him speak to
 “ me, and he assured me that he had the strongest
 “ Reasons

“ Reasons for concealing from you whatever he
 “ had done for your Father. You now see how
 “ far he was from saying any thing capable of
 “ offending you ; but you will be the Cause of
 “ his having no Confidence in me.” I endeavoured to give her Courage, and promised her, that she should never have any Reason to repent of her having told me the Truth.

As soon as she was retired my Tears began to flow ; for my Heart was scarcely able to contain the Sensibility and Tenderneſs with which it was inspired by ſuch generous Proceedings. I not only wanted the Power to forbid Mr. *de Maisencourt*’s coming to ſee me ; but I could not defend myſelf from indulging the Deſire of ſeeing him, and giving him Marks of that Gratitude, Love and Eſteem, with which my whole Soul was penetrated.

When he returned to ſee me, he was ſtill with my Aunt and Mr. *Dutertre* ; but how diſagreeable was this Mark of Circumſpection ! It deprived me of the Pleaſure of indulging all the Senſations with which my Boſom was agitated. Scarce could he turn his Eyes on another Object but mine were fixed on him, and I could not be ſatisfied with the Pleaſure of ſeeing and admiring him. A hundred Times I was tempted to follow the Emotions of my Heart, and to embrace

brace him before all the Company. Why should I blush at such a Transport? It was as pure and innocent as the Actions that would have produced it.

The Sensations which employ'd my Mind gave me an Air of Absence and Inattention, for which I was severely bantered; Mr. *de Maisencourt* had the Injustice to say that he feared his Company was troublesome. With what Readiness did I answer, in order to give him a contrary Opinion! What would I not have done to shew him the Pleasure his Presence gave me! In short, he perceived the State of my Mind, and appeared more satisfied; I became more gay; Mrs. *de la Chaise* seemed filled with Joy, but behaved with great Decency; and Mr. *Dutertre* behaved with more modesty than he was accustomed to use. We passed a delightful Evening, tho' there was something wanting to complete my Happiness. I would willingly have let Mr. *de Maisencourt* know that I desired to see him alone, and yet did not know how to do it: This was a Desire that no Motive could have rendered prudent; but where is the Person in love, tho' ever so virtuous, that has not been guilty of Imprudence?

I was not so dexterous in the Method I made use of to let him know my Thoughts, as to escape

escape being perceived. My Aunt made me blush at the first Suspicion she entertained of my Design, and my Confusion converted this Suspicion into Certainty. I had made use of the Pretence of wanting a Book I desired to read, when she maliciously replied, that I should be very sorry if he sent it by one of his Servants. In short, I was obliged to stand her Jest, and hear all the pleasant Things she thought proper to say on this Subject.

The next Day I prepared to receive Mr. *de Maisencourt*; but tho' I was as sure of his Discretion as of my own, I ordered *Marianne* to stay while he was with me in the Anti-chamber: As he had the Precaution not to come in his Coach, I did not know the Moment when he entered the House. Not but that I was twenty times tempted to watch for him at my Window; but I resolved not to gratify my eager Impatience. *Marianne* probably thought that he would pardon her having revealed what he had ordered her to conceal, if she herself informed him of it, and this made her resolve to tell him before she conducted him to my Apartment. I was ignorant of this Circumstance; and he appearing as he entered under a little Restraint, I could not avoid asking the Cause. " It proceeds from the Uncertainty I am in, said
" he

“ he in an affectionate Tone, as to the Impression you may have conceived from *Marianne’s* making you her Confident.” “ How much do you injure me ! said I ; you must suppose me to be the most ungrateful and the most unjust of Women, before you can hesitate about believing that so much Generosity would have subdued my Heart, if you had not already possessed it entirely.”

He embraced me in a Transport of Joy and Affection, while the small Resistance I made surprized me as much as it did him : We in this Moment said the most tender Things to each other. “ How should I reproach myself, said I at last, for the Weakness I discover, if my Confidence in you did not give me Courage !”

But it was not long before I was to be punished for this very Weakness that appeared so pardonable, and which I sought to justify to myself. I went some Days after to pay a Visit to my Aunt, whom I found with the young Count, and two of her female Friends. On my Entrance, I observed that they looked at me with a curious Eye, smiling at each other in a mysterious Manner ; every Question they asked me was formed into a Jest, and my Answers were so many Subjects of Mirth. The
Count

Count treated me with an Air of Familiarity that proceeded even to Indecency; I could not conquer the Vexation I received from this Treatment.

“ Pray, Madam, said I to Mrs. *de la Chaise*,
 “ be so good as to explain the Reason of all
 “ this. Am I ridiculous, or something extra-
 “ ordinary? I can neither discover the secret
 “ Meaning either of your Mirth, or your
 “ Questions.” “ Well, well, replied my Aunt,
 “ laughing again, this is no more than young
 “ married People meet with, and you ought
 “ not to be offended any more than they.”
 “ Really, said one of the Ladies, drawing up
 “ her Mouth and looking downwards, it is
 “ impossible to act the Part of an *Agnes* with
 “ more Skill.” “ I’ll lay a Wager, added the
 “ other, with an affected Air of Ingenuity,
 “ that she is so very innocent, that she did not
 “ think she did any Harm.” “ And I will
 “ maintain it, said the Count, that Miss has
 “ made a Defence worthy of her Virtue.”

The Confusion of my Ideas, and the Vexation I felt at finding that I was the Subject of their Mirth, disconcerted me to such a Degree, that I could do nothing but blush, turn pale, and look at them with Eyes of Astonishment, which was a sufficient Proof that I was really ignorant

ignorant of what they meant, when my Aunt perceiving my Embarrassment, “ It would be
 “ very pleasant, said she, with more Gaiety
 “ than Decency, if *Maisoncourt* should not have
 “ improved the Advantages he has had of hav-
 “ ing such an agreeable Girl for fifteen Days at
 “ his Disposal. It would indeed be unaccount-
 “ able.” “ But perhaps Miss is destined, re-
 “ plied one of the Ladies, to become the He-
 “ roine of Women in our Station.”

A mortal Shivering seized me at these Words; and I imagined that I could perceive all the Horror of my Fate. “ Ah Madam, cried I to
 “ Mrs. *de la Chaise*, what have I done to you
 “ that you should sacrifice me in this Manner?” My Grief hindered my proceeding, and my Tears flowed in Abundance; but they still continued their barbarous Jest, both on my Scruples, and what they called the ridiculous Virtue of my Lover. I contain’d myself however within Bounds, as much as possible, in order to learn the Substance of the detestable Plot, which they treated as a Subject of Mirth.

“ Mr. *de Maisoncourt* has so often teased me,
 “ said Mrs. *de la Chaise*, to listen to the Views
 “ he had upon you, that his Importunities, ad-
 “ ded to the Orders of Mr. *Dutertre*, who
 “ wanted to get rid of you, determined me to
 deceive

“ deceive you, in order to make you accept,
 “ under a borrowed Name, and from false
 “ Reasons, the Assistance you would not have
 “ failed to reject, if we had let you know the
 “ Hand from whence it came. I betray your
 “ Lover’s Secret; but it is really ridiculous for
 “ him to pretend to such Delicacy of Senti-
 “ ment; he would fain persuade me to believe,
 “ that he would keep you all your Life with-
 “ out your ever knowing any thing of the Mat-
 “ ter. That he might determine me to lend
 “ him my Assistance, he has endeavoured to
 “ persuade me that he would open his Purse no
 “ longer than till he has reconciled your Father
 “ to Mr. *de Vermont*: But I let him know that
 “ I am not so easily to be imposed upon; and
 “ beside, there was no need of such Pretences
 “ to make me seize an Opportunity of pro-
 “ curing you Subsistence.

“ You now see on what our Conversations
 “ turned, when you so often desired to know
 “ the Subject of them: He thought it was
 “ necessary to perpetuate your Error by taking
 “ the most scrupulous Precautions. He would
 “ have carried his Respect to a greater Length
 “ than you yourself would have done, and to
 “ what Purpose? To end after he had suffi-
 “ ciently tormented himself, as all other Lovers

I

“ do.

" do. But can it be possible that you have had
 " no Suspicion of the Truth? Are not you a
 " Hypocrite? Pray what Probability was there
 " that Mr. *Dutertre* should serve you without
 " taking Advantage of it, and at a Time too
 " when he saw you in Love with another? In-
 " deed, continued she, *Maisoncourt* is a *Don*
 " *Quixote* in Delicacy; or rather, he does not
 " love you so much as he pretends. You may
 " see what Dependence is to be placed on the
 " Flattery of Men. Was I in your Place, I
 " should be heartily vexed at being used with
 " such Contempt."

" Be revenged on him, added the Count,
 " with an Air of Triumph; I swear, that if
 " you'll make use of my Zeal to serve you, you
 " shall not be fifteen Days without."—I here
 interrupted him with a Look of such Contempt
 as prevented his proceeding.

" When the first Fervour of your Virtue is
 " over, said my Aunt, it will give me some
 " Pleasure to have procured you a Fortune so
 " agreeable as that you may enjoy, if you have
 " the Wit to behave like a Woman of Under-
 " standing."

L

The

The Efforts I made to restrain the Effects of my Grief and Indignation, disordered me to such a Degree, that I was ready to fall off my Seat. They saw that I was fainting, and gave me immediate Assistance; but the Rage with which I was filled was of more Service in bringing me to myself, than the Pains they bestowed upon me. On my recovering my Senses I perceived the Count busied with the rest in loosening my Stays, when I gave him a Kick on the Shins with such Violence, as prevented his daring to approach me again. They desired him to leave us, and as soon as he was gone, I reproached my Aunt in the warmest Terms, and protested that I would never enter the House again. She answered me only by ridiculing my Fears; and despairing of her being able to calm me, desired one of the two Ladies who were present, and who passed in this Society for a Wit, to make use of such Arguments as she thought was most capable of giving me Courage. She immediately complied with her Request, and after letting me know that I did not deserve to have my ridiculous Scruples answered; yet, in Consideration of my Youth and Inexperience, as she pretended, she made a long Speech to prove that what I regarded as the greatest Misfortune that could happen to me, was the highest Happiness I ought to expect.

I was more than once tempted to interrupt her who held this tedious and abominable Discourse, to make her sensible that I felt as much Indignation at the Depravity of her Morals, as Contempt for the Falsity of her Reasonings; I might have opposed against them the excellent Principles Mr. *le Franc* had laid before me to engage me to fly from the State they would make me embrace; but I was in too violent a Situation to enjoy the Liberty of Mind necessary on such an Occasion. I therefore contented myself with saying, that the Abuse she made of her Wit, in order to justify her Faults, was the more criminal, as she ought to be most sensible of her Error.

“ The falsest Pretences, added I, may in
 “ the Eyes of a guilty Woman appear as con-
 “ vincing Reasons, when they are made use of
 “ to excuse her own Vices; but can she who
 “ has nothing to reproach herself with ever find
 “ them capable of making her take the Reso-
 “ lution to become vicious? The Contempt
 “ with which you threaten me is so far from be-
 “ ing a Motive to Vice, that it ought to be a
 “ strong one against it. Men are not so unjust
 “ as you imagine; they despise none but those
 “ who deserve it, at least if they have not given
 “ room for Suspicion by their Imprudence; and
 “ tho’

“ tho’ the Innocent should have the Misfortune
 “ of being suspected, they have an inward Con-
 “ solation which you want ; and sooner or later
 “ the World will do them Justice : For a good
 “ Reputation, which is here an invaluable
 “ Treasure, will be at last the Fruit of their Per-
 “ severance and Virtue. Don’t hope then.”—

Mrs. *de la Chaise* here interrupted me with
 a Sort of Compassion, telling me that I should al-
 ways be a Prude and a Fool ; adding, that I
 might manage my Affairs as I pleased with Mr.
de Maisencourt ; but that she would never more
 suffer me to live in her House. “ I am much
 “ afraid,” said she, on my rising to go, “ that
 “ you, and those who applaud themselves for
 “ following the same Principles, will acknow-
 “ ledge, when it is too late, that they are not
 “ able to save you from Ruin.”

I was obliged to submit to the Necessity of
 Circumstances, and to return home. But with
 how many cruel Reflections was I oppressed,
 when I saw myself alone in the midst of that
 same Apartment which a few Hours before was
 in my Esteem, an Abode so tranquil, so agree-
 able, so innocent, and in which I could not now
 stay without Shame ! All the Objects that struck
 my Sight seemed to reproach me with the Ig-
 nominy

nominy of my State : I thought my want of Fore-sight a Crime, and that I was guilty in not refusing Benefits that ought to have filled me with Suspicion.

In another Moment, when Love regained the Ascendant, I was on the Point of excusing this criminal Treachery, and of being even pleased at the Precaution made use of. I recalled with Pleasure the noble and disinterested Manner in which Mr. *de Maisencourt* had always acted : Had he ever left me room to suspect that to him alone both my Father and I owed our Welfare ? Had he not, on the contrary, made use of all his Endeavours to conceal it from me ? Strange Enchantment of Love ! Every thing that resembles Virtue becomes so many Weapons in its Hands to attack that same Virtue, which it knows how to conquer by assuming the Appearance of all that is good and great and generous.

What was my Trouble and Perplexity when I thought of the Moment in which I should see this Benefactor whom I could not hate, who could no longer esteem me, when he should know of my being informed of what he had so long concealed ? I could not now esteem myself since I perceived that his Artifices, flattering as they were to my Self-love, were only Snarcs

laid to acquire an Authority, not over my Heart, he was but too well persuaded, said I, that he possessed it without Reserve, but over my Person. Could I avoid being confounded by so humbling a Reflexion ? It afflicted me so much the more, as I could not conceal from myself the Weakness of a Woman in Love, who is surrounded by no Bar that can serve for her Defence.

Let me for ever leave a Place that may be so fatal, cried I, rising with Precipitation : Let me abandon myself to Providence. Oh ! to what Dangers may I rashly expose myself ? I fell back into my Seat in the greatest Consternation. Why do I afflict myself to this Degree, said I at last, while I have in my Possession the Means of putting a Period to the Evils that surround me ? All the Misfortunes I have till this Moment suffered, proclaim that I ought for ever to leave them to obtain the Enjoyment of a State of Happiness without Reproach. Sooner or later I shall be forced to yield to the Necessity of being wanting to myself. The Love, the Address, even the Virtues of a too tenderly beloved Seducer, my own Inclination, the Esteem and Confidence with which he knows how to inspire me, all conspire to conquer me ; and I shall one Day find, without having perceived the Gradation of my Weakness, that I am the
most

most despicable of all Women. Ah! rather let me suffer Death than such a Fate. At this Instant I seized a Bodkin which lay on my Toilet, and placed the Point towards my Breast, and cried, Let me pierce this Heart a thousand Times, rather than consent to degrade it by such Baseness. It is still pure and without Remorse: I shall at least render it up to God such as I received it from him, and Oh! thou the Author of my Despair, added I, looking at Mr. *de Maisencourt's* Picture, when thou see'st my Blood, do not reproach thyself with my Death. I had devoted my Life to thee, and if I take it away, it is only that I may die possessed of thine and my own Esteem.

An universal Annihilation of all Sensibility and a mournful Silence succeeded these passionate Ravings. It seemed as if the Horror of the Project had made my Soul shrink back, and that all its Faculties were suspended. But what, cried I, on recovering myself, what is then the Excess of my Misfortune! If I should be so cowardly as not always to oppose their Views, I should not have even the Merit of the Sacrifices I made; I should appear to discharge a Debt, and to accomplish a shameful Bargain. What Ignominy!—But why should I be so greatly concerned at being informed of the Truth?

Heaven doubtless, for wise Reasons, permitted Mrs. *de la Chaise's* Indiscretion. Had I not the most pressing Need of it, in order to call my Pride to the Assistance of my Reason, which alone perhaps would not have been sufficient? Yes, cried I, his Benefits themselves shall be the Arms I will make use of against him. What then, added I, casting my Eyes round my Apartment, do I not hold all I have from him! Furniture, Linen, Cloaths. Ah! let me preserve nothing that can recall the Remembrance of my having consented to make use of such fatal Presents. At these Words I undressed myself with Precipitation; I threw down my Gown with Indignation, I put on that I had brought from the *Hotel Dieu*, I did not see it without calling to mind the Purity of my Soul at the Time I wore it, and without comparing my present State with that I would then have embraced.

My Spirits were so exhausted by these various Agitations, that I at last fell asleep on the Couch on which I was sitting. Mr. *de Maisencourt* entered without my hearing him, and resolved to kiss my Hand by surprize; I awaked with all the Marks of a mortal Terror: His Presence struck me speechless; he threw himself at my Knees to beg Pardon: I observed in his Eyes, and in all his Actions such passionate Tenderness,

and

and at the same Time such Respect, that my Courage had like to have forsaken me: But seeing that he persisted in holding my Hand, and in speaking openly of the Love with which I had inspired him, I fled from him with an Emotion of Horror.

“ Cease,” said I, in a Tone of Indignation,
 “ cease to take Advantage of my State, and to
 “ make my Misfortunes the Occasion of ren-
 “ dering me as contemptible as yourself. Think
 “ that I see the Falseness of your Delicacy, and
 “ the Baseness of all your Sentiments. I am in-
 “ formed of the detestable Arts by which you
 “ have drawn me into the Snare you have laid
 “ for me: Never hope to reap the Fruit of your
 “ unworthy Treachery: If I can have no other
 “ Resource than what you can offer me, Death
 “ will always appear preferable to it. You
 “ may assure yourself that I have the most per-
 “ fect Contempt for you, for your Benefits, for
 “ your Sentiments. You for whom I had con-
 “ ceived such an Esteem, that I thought you the
 “ most virtuous Man living; you who have had
 “ the Art to persuade me, that you have been
 “ concerned for my Misery, you yourself cover
 “ me with Reproach, and have dug under my
 “ Feet an Abyss that is so much the more dange-
 “ rous, in as much as the Depth was concealed

“ from me. By what Fatality have you chosen
 “ me for the unhappy Victim of your Depra-
 “ vity. Ah ! doubtless I have but too well de-
 “ served the Contempt you have had for me,
 “ since I convinced you of a Weakness that
 “ ought to have been concealed even from my-
 “ self : How severely am I punished for it !
 “ However, I thank Heaven for discovering the
 “ Precipice on which I walk, at a Time when
 “ I have still the Power to avoid it. Yes, Sir,
 “ my Resolution is taken : I will rather put a
 “ Period to my Life than be obliged longer to
 “ reap any Advantage from your Services. I
 “ however desire that you will grant me two Re-
 “ quests ; the first is that you will never see me
 “ more ; and the other, that you will permit
 “ me to sell whatever I have received from you,
 “ to facilitate my Entrance into a Convent,
 “ where not being able to become a regular
 “ Nun, I may enter it, at least as a Sister de-
 “ stined to serve the other Religious : An Em-
 “ ployment too honourable for so unhappy a
 “ Creature as I am.”

Mr. *de Maisencourt* then poured forth all the
 moving Rhetorick that Love, Grief and Respect
 could inspire. He would have convinced me,
 that he only intended to lend me his Assistance
 2 till

till he had succeeded in re-establishing me in the Possession of my Grandfather's Estate.

“ Remove for ever from me, replied I, perfidious Seducer; all your Efforts to revive my Confidence are only new Arts intended to take Advantage of my Credulity. Go from my Presence, and regard me as the most unhappy of Women, since by detesting you, I am obliged, in order to avoid you, to make use of your Assistance.” He would have persisted in his own Vindication, but he soon saw that whatever he said only served to augment my Resentment, and therefore at last took his Leave with all the Marks of the most violent Despair.

How wretched was I the Moment I was alone! He had not yet left the House, when I already reproached myself with the Severity with which I had just treated him. He left me more unhappy than he found me; for I had now not only my own Pain to support, but also that I had given him.

Why, said I with a deep Sigh, have I, without the least Precaution, grieved a Man who may not be so guilty as I suspect? May not Mr. *de Maisencourt*, with the Sentiments I know he possesses, be capable of obliging an unfortunate Woman,

Woman, without making his Benefits the Price of her Shame? Can I reproach him with his having ever shewn the least Desire that could offend me? Has he not always, on the contrary, treated me with the same Respect he would have shewn for the most worthy Woman? But, added I, it is not from his Opinion and mine that the Public will form their Judgment; and therefore, if I would preserve my Reputation, I ought to pay a Regard to the Public, who can only judge by Appearances. We ought to respect even their Errors. By consenting to remain in the State I am in, I shall be considered as a Girl whom he supports; and who will believe that a Woman of twenty Years of Age, in this Situation, can maintain an innocent Correspondence with a Man of thirty, and a Man too whom she loves? I ought not therefore to reproach myself with the Severity with which I have treated him.

However, if he obeys my Orders, he will never return.—What shall I never see him more, him for whom alone I live, him who is the only Person in the World who has the least Regard for me? While abandoned by my Relations, he is my only Protector, my Friend, my Father, and yet I drive him for ever from my Presence: I drive him from a House where every thing proclaims

proclaims his Tenderneſs to me, where every thing ſhews the Nobleneſs of his Sentiments. Where can I caſt my Eyes without their meeting with his Benefits ?

I paſſed the Night in theſe cruel Agitations, and was the next Day under the ſame Uncertainty, when I was informed that Mr. *de Ber-ville* ſent up his Name. My Uneaſineſs was extremely great, and that I might conceal it from him, I deſired that he would wait a Moment, under the Pretence of putting my Room in order.

“ Pardon me, Miſs, ſaid he, for appearing
 “ before you, without firſt being aſſured that
 “ my Viſit would be agreeable ; but the lively
 “ Concern I feel for his Happineſs whom I re-
 “ preſent, has given me this Boldneſs. The
 “ Deſpair into which you have caſt my Friend,
 “ is too dreadful not to excite my Zeal ; and I
 “ dare add, that it is too great not to move you,
 “ if you were a Witneſs of it. I find the only
 “ Crime with which you reproach him, is the
 “ Expedient he has made uſe of, in order to
 “ prevail on you to accept of his Services. Yet
 “ you have treated his Conduct as a criminal
 “ Treachery, as a deteſtable Artifice ; you have
 “ loaded him with the moſt odious Names :
 “ And, in the mean time, what Crime has he
 “ committed ? Would you have accepted of his
 “ Services,

“ Services, if he had not taken the Part you
 “ complain of? You have not a just Idea of the
 “ Motives of his Actions, and take that for a
 “ Gift which he has only lent you. His sole
 “ Intention is to assist you in recovering a For-
 “ tune which you are deprived of by an unjust
 “ Sister. Even the Means he has made use of
 “ to assist you, turn to your own Glory.
 “ Would he have taken such Pains to disguise
 “ his Benefits, if he had not known your De-
 “ licacy, and Fears for your Virtue? In short,
 “ if it is an Artifice, it is that of a Person who
 “ has a most delicate and most tender Mind;
 “ Love alone could inspire, and Love ought to
 “ pardon it.”

“ But, Sir, interrupted I, it is still the Work
 “ of Love, and from thence I cannot conceal
 “ from myself the Consequences of Mr. *de Mai-*
 “ *soncourt*’s Conduct. I appeal to yourself, Sir,
 “ would you advise your Daughter to be satis-
 “ fied with such Pretences, and to be blind to
 “ the Dangers that threatened her? I see that
 “ your Virtue is warped by your Friendship:
 “ If you thought of him with Indifference, his
 “ Conduct would appear as criminal to you as
 “ it does to me. If his Intentions were such as
 “ you suppose them to be, why did he make a
 “ Mystery of them to me? Should I have been
 “ offended

“ offended at them ? Would he not, if he had
 “ a Respect for me, have placed me in a Con-
 “ vent, instead of putting me in a Station that
 “ must appear to be infamous, and that must
 “ expose me to the Resentment of his Uncle ? ”

“ That was impossible, *Mr. de Berville* re-
 “ plied eagerly. As he had formed the Design
 “ of claiming the Assistance of Justice, to deli-
 “ ver *Mr. de Vermont* from your Sister’s Ty-
 “ ranny, there is a Necessity for your appear-
 “ ing before your Judges, and taking the ne-
 “ cessary Steps. In regard to the President, you
 “ ought to be entirely easy ; for he is ignorant
 “ of your Connection with his Nephew. Don’t
 “ therefore give Way to such ill-grounded
 “ Fears. The Effect of *Mr. de Maisencourt’s* good
 “ Intentions will justify his Conduct ; and espe-
 “ cially let me intreat you not to take any vio-
 “ lent and too precipitate Resolutions.”

“ This, Sir, said I, I cannot agree to, with-
 “ out exposing myself to all the Vexation I
 “ would avoid. What you have said is not
 “ capable of giving me Courage. I cannot
 “ conceal the tender Regard I have for your
 “ Friend ; but you, at the same time ought not
 “ to be ignorant, that this tender Regard is
 “ what I ought most to dread : For my own
 “ Security, therefore, I would place Obstacles
 “ that

“ that would render it impossible for me to
 “ yield to my own Inclinations.”

“ How unhappy am I! replied Mr. *de Berville*.
 “ In what Manner shall I appear before my
 “ Friend? It seems that my interfering has only
 “ the more confirmed his Disgrace. I know
 “ Mr. *de Maisencourt*, and never has his Heart
 “ deceived me. All he has said at a Time
 “ when he could have no Interest in imposing
 “ upon me, convince me of the Purity of his
 “ Intentions, and of the Respect he will always
 “ have for you. Allow him Time to lay open
 “ his Views: You know that all his Fortune
 “ depends on an Uncle whom he is obliged to
 “ humour; and tho’ you should secretly pre-
 “ serve your Resentment, flatter at least his
 “ Despair; be generous enough to leave him
 “ some Hope of being able to prevail. He does
 “ not design to return till you give him leave,
 “ and he will even quit *Paris*, if his Neigh-
 “ bourhood is offensive to you. Permit me to
 “ tell you, that it would be unjust, and even
 “ cruel, to reject such reasonable Proposals.”
 “ Remember, Sir, replied I, the Engagements
 “ you enter into with me; for if ever I should
 “ have Reason to repent of my complying with
 “ your Entreaties, you alone will be the Person
 “ I shall reproach for it. But whatever Con-
 “ fidence

" fidence I have in your Promises, 'you must
 " make your Friend agree to one Condition,
 " without which I can grant nothing: I have
 " been made to hope that I shall soon see my
 " Mother; let him not come here till she lives
 " with me. I may then with greater Tran-
 " quillity take the necessary Measures to pro-
 " cure a Fate different from that he prepared
 " for me."

To this Mr. *de Berville* consented, and I em-
 ployed myself more than ever in my Endeavours
 to find my Mother. Heaven favoured my En-
 quiries, and I at last discovered the Place of her
 Retreat. My Joy was extremely great when I
 found that she lived in a Convent; for her
 chusing this Manner of Life, gave me Hopes
 that there had been wrought a happy Change in
 her Conduct. She would not suffer me to go
 there to her; but informed me of the Day when
 she would come to me. But notwithstanding
 the Impatience with which I longed to see her,
 I was not without Uneasiness at what she would
 think of the Situation in which she would find
 me. This Day at last came. With how many
 Tears on my Side were our first Embraces at-
 tended!

My Mother indeed appeared to be but little
 moved. Her first Care was to view me and the
 Apartment,

Apartment, in a very severe and critical Manner. " In what Situation do I find you, said she, and what is the Meaning of all this ? " No, you are not my Daughter, you are no longer my virtuous *Constantia*, but a lost Child : This is a most fatal Blow to me ; and all my past Troubles are nothing in Comparison of the Shame with which you cover me."

At this Discourse I had the Air of a Person who is reproached for what she knows she deserves. I durst not lift up my Eyes, and my Silence, no doubt, fully convinced her that I was guilty. I, however, presently assured her, that tho' Appearances were against me, I was not so culpable as she imagined ; and then in a few Words gave her an Account of my Situation.

" It seems, said she, that you have endeavoured to make your whole Conduct as offensive to me as possible. What, could you place your Affections on nobody but the Man I have Reason to hate, and who was always either a secret, or a declared Enemy to your Mother ?—But have you flattered yourself with escaping the Danger you have exposed yourself to ? Suppose that this Man has hitherto supported you for nothing, do you imagine that he will not soon expect a Recompence ?" She then made a long Discourse,

course, filled with the soundest Morals, and the most sacred Maxims of Truth.

I acknowledged the Excellence of her Principles, and took the Liberty in my turn, to ask her some Questions on her Situation, “ I thank
 “ Heaven, she replied, that I am recovered
 “ from all the Errors for which I deserved Reproach, God has opened my Eyes, by depriving me of him who was the Author of
 “ my Faults.” She then informed me that *Durval* had been killed in a Quarrel at play; and renewed her Lessons on mentioning his Death. I entered into all her Arguments, and concluded with offering her the little Money I had. “ I should think, said she, with a Look
 “ of Indignation, that I shared in your Guilt,
 “ if I accepted your Offers: Besides, I have
 “ no Occasion for it: I am with a Lady of
 “ Distinction in the Convent where I live, and
 “ would not change my Solitude for a Throne.” She then added that this Lady had a Son who was an Abbé, and very rich, and gave him the greatest Praises.

I durst not therefore make the Proposal of her coming to live with me: She appeared too well satisfied with her Condition, and to have too great a Contempt for mine, to afford me any Hopes that she would change her Abode.

I satisfied myself with inviting her to dine with me, and with giving her as good an Entertainment as possible. My Caresses insensibly smoothed her Brow; her Zeal relaxed; she began to say many tender Things of my Person, and to assure me that I was greatly improved since she saw me last. “ What a Pity
 “ is it, said she, viewing me tenderly, that so
 “ charming a Creature should be at the Mercy
 “ of a Man of the Robe, while a Duke would
 “ think himself happy in possessing her !” These Exclamations seemed to me to agree very little with the pious Exhortations she had lately made me: And indeed I soon saw that she was not so much changed as I had imagined. She returned two Days after, and declared, that she could not suffer me to be any longer in the State in which she found me. “ I have spoke of you
 “ to the Abbé de St. * * *, said she, and he
 “ has promised to make use of all his Credit to
 “ get you admitted into a Convent.” “ They
 “ refused to admit me, replied I, at a Time
 “ when there was less Reason for excluding me
 “ than there is at present, and I doubt whether
 “ any Convent will take a Girl in the State to
 “ which I am reduced.” “ In that Case, added
 “ my Mother, we must think of marrying
 “ you; this is the Alternative which the Abbé
 “ and I have agreed to offer you; and I ex-
 “ pressly

" pressly declare, that I would suffer the greatest
 " Hardships rather than permit you to stay
 " longer in the Situation you are now in."
 " The same Reasons that exclude me from a
 " Convent, said I, prevent my thinking of
 " Marriage." " What Man is there that
 " would marry a Woman, supposed to be ano-
 " ther's Mistress ? and tho' I should find such
 " a Person, I could have no Prospect of Hap-
 " piness." " It is then decided, said she, that
 " you, through Inclination, embrace the State
 " of——." At this, the Colour came into my
 Face. " However, added she, if you should
 " do so, you ought not to lay the Fault on me.
 " But since this is the Life you chuse to lead,
 " I would advise you to make choice of a Lover
 " worthy of you. Ought a Girl, with so much
 " Beauty, to work and to live on a second
 " Floor ? What Furniture is here ? No Ser-
 " vants ; no Cloaths. I thought you had had
 " more Understanding and more Pride. You
 " don't know, Child, that the more a Mistress
 " costs a Lover, the more fond he is of her.
 " And then in what a Station have you chose
 " yours ? If I debased myself so far as to accept
 " of a Magistrate, I had at least a President. I
 " kept a House, had Domestics, a Coach at
 " my Command, a Wardrobe well filled, and
 " Jewels ; but here every thing is mean ; the
 " Servant,

“ Servant, the Street, the House, the Furni-
 “ ture, and Cloaths, proclaim you to be at
 “ most only the Mistress of a Subaltern Officer.”

“ I am contented with being what you find
 “ me,” said I, as much surprized as shocked
 at her Discourse ; “ and if I was not deterred
 “ by other Reasons from continuing to live in
 “ my present Station, I would not change it
 “ for all the Grandeur you mention.” “ Poor
 “ Innocent ! cried she, thou hast not the first No-
 “ tions of the Profession thou would’st embrace.
 “ If thou would’st preserve thy Virtue, and ha’st
 “ any Faith in me, follow my Advice, leave
 “ *Maisoncourt*, and take Advantage of the favour-
 “ able Dispositions with which I have inspired
 “ the Abbé ; he is a good-natured Man, who
 “ takes a Pleasure in saving young Creatures,
 “ like you, from the Seducements of the
 “ World. His Fortune puts it in his Power to
 “ place us in a very agreeable Situation ; be-
 “ sides, he possesses several good Benefices ; and
 “ his Birth gives him a Right to hope for some-
 “ thing better. Nothing could be more happy
 “ for you than becoming the Object of his
 “ Zeal and Charity. On the Description I
 “ have given him of your Character and Senti-
 “ ments, he has proposed to give us a small
 “ House on the Ramparts, that was last in-
 “ habited

“ habited by a Woman for whom he pro-
 “ cured some Assistance. I promised to speak
 “ to you about it; and have assured him before-
 “ hand, that you will not hesitate about break-
 “ ing all your Connections with the World,
 “ but would eagerly embrace such an Oppor-
 “ tunity for leading a tranquil and innocent
 “ Life.— You make me no Answer, added
 “ she, observing that I was still silent: Shall I be
 “ obliged to use my Authority as a Mother to
 “ make you return to your Duty? What Rea-
 “ son can hinder your accepting the Proposal I
 “ have made? If Mr. *de Maisencourt* loves you
 “ for your own Sake, if he has Views as pure
 “ as he pretends, you cannot find the least Re-
 “ sistance on his Side. I will give you till to-
 “ morrow to think of it; and you must come
 “ to the Convent to let me know your final
 “ Resolution,”

I replied at last, that I believed Mr. *de Mai-
 fencourt* would not hinder my following a De-
 sign that appeared to me so conformable to Ho-
 nour and Religion: I added however, that
 there still remained in my Mind some Doubts,
 with respect to the Abbé's Intentions; and that
 at the same Time they gave me an Uneasiness,
 the Cause of which I could not discover.

She

She was going to add some other Arguments, when I saw a Woman enter, who was entirely unknown to me, but my Mother told me, that she was Chambermaid to the Lady she lived with; and added, that she had desired her to call at my Lodgings, that they might return home together: She seemed to have a very flip-pant Wit, and a peculiar Talent at becoming extremely intimate at first Sight; she bestowed many Praises upon me, particularly admired the Beauty of my Hair, and begged the Favour to put it in order, to shew me the most fashionable Method of wearing it; and my Mother insisted on my gratifying her Desire to see me completely dressed. I had not at first the least Distrust of their Design, and consented to their joint Request. We were employed the rest of the Morning at my Toilet, with all the Application possible, and as they staid till Dinner was ready, I asked them both to dine with me. I could not tell how to account for the obliging Things they said to me: My Mother caressed me with the greatest Marks of Affection; and finding that I behaved with more Gaiety than ordinary, she told me, in a jesting Manner, that she should be charmed to have the Abbé see me, dress'd as I then was. "Why," replied the Chambermaid, "he may possibly come to take us up here: I told him where Miss lives, and
 " that

“ that he would find you here after Dinner.” My Uneasiness was extremely great at these Words, which informed me that what had passed was done with a Design to make me appear to greater Advantage before Mr. *de St.* * * *. My Dresser instantly perceived that I had penetrated into the Mystery, and joined with my Mother in rallying my Timidity; but I declared that I would not appear in this Manner before one whom I did not know: But that very Moment his Coach stopped at the Door, and the Abbé entered. Tho’ he behaved in the most respectful and polite Manner, that did not prevent my telling him, that tho’ I was sensible of the Honour he did me, the Disproportion of our Circumstances forced me to desire him to behave with greater Circumspection, since he could not be ignorant that a Visit from him might injure my Reputation.

My Mother spoke in his Favour, even with a Sort of Authority; but I had resolved how to behave as soon as I perceived that they had played upon me. The Abbé was a little disconcerted at my Coldness, and the Perseverance with which I refused all the Advances he made me; and at last retired, making Excuses for his, or rather my Mother’s Indiscretion; for that she, he said, had flattered him with the Hopes of

M

meeting

meeting with a very different Reception. As soon as he was gone, she made me some Reproaches ; but I had before taken her Pleasantry too ill, for her to have Hopes of making any Impression upon me : She therefore took her Leave, repeating her Orders to give her my Answer on the Subject of our first Conversation.

I was at first tempted to put an ill Construction on the Visit she had procured me : I thought, however, that mere Curiosity might bring the Abbé to see me ; and therefore saw no Reason for changing my Resolution ; but prepared to go the next Day to the Convent, that I might be the more certain of the Degree of Confidence I ought to place in her Promises.

Mr. *de Berville* paid me a Visit the same Day : I let him know the Resolution I had taken, and desired him to engage Mr. *de Maisencourt* to come and receive my Thanks for the Favours he had granted me. He saw me so determined, that he did not insist on some Arguments he at first made use of ; and indeed nothing could appear more reasonable to one who naturally imagined that a Daughter would run no Hazard in putting herself into her Mother's Power.

Mr. *de Maisencourt* entered, and I had not the least Difficulty in observing the Consternation visible

visible in his Countenance : But I was armed with Resolution, and did not seem to take Notice of it. I gave him an Account of the Conversations I had had with my Mother, omitting what would appear to her Disadvantage, and concluded with assuring him that I adopted this new Scheme the more freely, as it would not prevent my seeing him, and giving him Marks of my Gratitude.

“ Too credulous *Constantia*, cried he, you
 “ will be the Victim of your Confidence in a
 “ Mother, who only seeks to deceive you. I
 “ am sensible that I am going to displease you ;
 “ but the Evil appears too great for me not to
 “ acquaint you fully with it. Your Mother is a
 “ Hypocrite, whose Discourse, whatever Pains
 “ may have taken to soften it, proves the Bad-
 “ ness of her Designs. You may be assured that
 “ she is endeavouring to take you out of the
 “ Hands of a Man whom she hates, and who
 “ perfectly knows her, to give you to the Abbé.
 “ Thus, after having set you the worst Exam-
 “ ple, she would ruin you by her fatal Advice.”

“ Remember, Sir, said I, that whatever my
 “ Mother is, nobody has a Right to speak ill of
 “ her before me. I see what would be my Fate
 “ was I to continue in your Power ; you would
 “ not fail to exercise on me the Tyranny which

“ the Unhappy who resemble me are obliged to
 “ endure. My Mother becomes the more dear
 “ to me in Proportion to the little Respect you
 “ treat her with, and she will deliver me from
 “ a Yoke, the Weight of which I find will
 “ be rendered insupportable.”

When I reflect on the Severity and Rudeness
 with which I treated him, I am at a Loss to
 comprehend how I found the Courage to behave
 thus to him ; but Passion, not Reflexion, took
 place in all I said : I could not treat him ill
 without departing from my Character : But
 proud Minds are wounded by the Authority that
 another would acquire over them, and easily
 start back at Things that have the least Relation
 to a Power that fills them with Apprehensions,
 and which they resolve to avoid.

“ Your Injustice afflicts more than it sur-
 “ prizes me,” Mr. *de Maisencourt* mildly re-
 “ plied. “ But I can suffer still more of it,
 “ provided my Representations give you at least
 “ some Distrust. I beg but one Favour : I am
 “ persuaded that they have desired you to go to
 “ the Convent only to procure the Abbé the
 “ Pleasure of seeing you more freely, and of
 “ making his own Proposals. Promise me only
 “ to examine his Actions and Discourse, and to
 “ compare them with the Opinion I have of
 “ their

“ their Designs, and look upon me as the most
 “ unjust Man living, if you do not find that I
 “ have penetrated into them.” The Remarks
 I had already made on my Mother’s Discourse
 and Behaviour, made me now answer him with
 more Moderation.

When I went to meet her at the Convent, I
 was told she was gone out, but the Chamber-
 maid whom she had acquainted with my Visit,
 came to conduct me to her, and that was to the
 very House we were to inhabit. This House
 was situated, as they had told me, on the Ram-
 parts, it had two Entrances, and was only one
 Story high, and indeed it was capable of holding
 only a very small Family : No neighbouring
 Window could overlook either the Building it-
 self, or the little Garden that belonged to it.

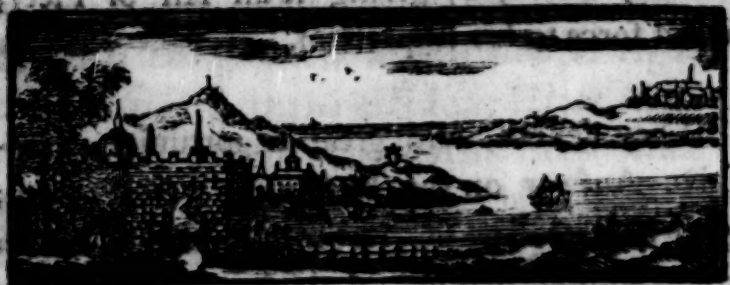
My Mother made me observe how very agree-
 able and commodious this little Abode was, and
 that the Furniture, tho’ plain, was perfectly
 elegant: And indeed I could not help saying,
 that I thought it an agreeable Place. “ Well, re-
 “ plied she, with an Air of Satisfaction, you have
 “ it in your own Power to become Mistress of it
 “ to-morrow, and to share it with me. If you
 “ doubt of it, the Abbé, who is in that Closet,
 “ will confirm what I say.” I blushed at seeing
 him appear, and my Timidity rendered me more

valuable in his Sight. He said a thousand flattering Things, expressed in the most delicate Manner, and he knew so well how to regulate his Behaviour, that he kissed my Hand, without the Action appearing to me at all extraordinary. I thought that being a Person of high Birth, this Gallantry was not to be considered as having any Meaning: However, his Looks of Curiosity ran over my whole Person with an Avidity that disconcerted me; and tho' they both strove to give me the Picture of an innocent and irreproachable Life, they were unable to make the least Impression upon me; for I was at a Loss how to reconcile that Purity of Manners they had incessantly in their Mouths, with the Actions I could not but observe.

After a short Conversation a Collation was served up, extremely delicate, though without Pomp, and in Appearance without Preparation. My Mother was the first who endeavoured to enliven the Discourse, tho' this was managed with the greatest Decency: I don't know under what Pretence it was that she made me pull off my Mantelet; but I thought I could perceive, that from that Moment the Zeal of my Benefactor was considerably encreased. He span'd my Waist with his Hands, and his Praises were never exhausted. He did not fail, however, to
mingle

mingle in his Discourse some mystical and devout Terms, which, by giving it an Air of Piety, added force to his Expression.

They desired, with great Importunity, a positive Answer on the Resolution I had taken; yet I hesitated and sought for Pretences to return home without making an absolute Promise; for I had not a Freedom of Mind sufficient to permit me to come to a Determination. In short, after having said whatever they imagined most proper to give me Courage, and fix my Resolution, they ceased to press me any farther, and suffered me to leave them.



THE
S C H O O L
O F
W O M A N.

P A R T I V.

I Returned home under the greatest Uncertainty as to the Judgment I ought to form of their Views with respect to me ; but had I had a little more Experience, this Embarrassment would soon have been at an End. The Fear of being unjustly offended at Things that appeared very doubtful, left me in a State of Uncertainty ; I however gave Mr. *de Maisencourt* an Account of all that had passed ; but as his Interest was concerned

cerned in inspiring me with Distrust, I was not convinced by his Arguments. " What gives
 " me the greatest Uneasiness, said I to him, is
 " that my Mother may carry Things to the
 " most cruel Extremities, if I presume to act
 " contrary to her Will. Appearances are for
 " her, and against me, and above all Things I
 " fear her Resentment."

" I assure you, said he, that she cannot do
 " you the least Hurt, and that if you consent
 " to it, I will cause her to be confined within
 " eight Days. Your Mother is in her Husband's
 " Power, she can do nothing without him :
 " And I am sure to gain him over by procuring
 " for him what will be sufficient to gratify his
 " ruling Passion. Therefore, by acting in con-
 " cert with him, my Uncle and the Abbé *Dur-*
 " *val*, who have all Reason to complain of
 " her, we shall place her in such a State, as to
 " prevent her giving you any farther Disturb-
 " ance."

" I believe, Sir, replied I, that whatever
 " Cause we have to reproach a Mother, nothing
 " can justify a Daughter who seeks for Revenge.
 " 'Tis true, that according to you, mine has,
 " with respect to me, violated the Duties of
 " Nature, Honour and Religion ; but Religion,
 " Honour and Nature oblige me not only to

“ cease my Resentment, but also to do her all
 “ the Good in my Power. Preserve me only
 “ from the Mischief she is capable of doing me,
 “ and I shall be happy : If I was to beg any
 “ Favour of you, so far from being willing to
 “ give her an Uneasiness, I should entreat you
 “ to prevent her having any Reason to fear the
 “ Captivity she is threatened with. Why
 “ should you deprive her of the Air she
 “ breathes ; is she not enough to be pitied,
 “ from her having rendered herself worthy of
 “ Reproach ?” Mr. *de Maisencourt* gave the
 highest Praises to my Sentiments, and taking
 his leave, promised to procure me the Satis-
 faction I demanded.

I dreaded the first Visit I should receive from
 my Mother ; and indeed she complained bit-
 terly, that in leaving her and the Abbé, I had
 shewn that I had not the least Confidence in
 what she said to me. “ How unhappy am I,
 “ said she with Tears in her Eyes, in having by
 “ my Faults rendered all I do suspected ! But
 “ since you are afraid of coming to live with
 “ me, I will stay with you, in order to convince
 “ you by my Conduct and Advice, what a sin-
 “ cere Desire I have to make you avoid the
 “ Snares that are laid for you. You shall be
 “ sensible of your Injustice in suspecting my In-
 “ tentions ;

“ tentions ; as I see you do, and in making such
 “ an ill Return to the Advances of the most
 “ worthy Man you were ever acquainted with.
 “ But whatever is offensive in your Conduct
 “ ought not to be imputed to you. You fol-
 “ low the Advice of a Man who is capable of
 “ poisoning all my most innocent Actions, and
 “ who, doubtless, to give me the last Proof of
 “ his Hatred, strives to deprive me of my
 “ Daughter’s Esteem. This is the heaviest
 “ Stroke Heaven has reserved for me, and the
 “ deepest Affliction I have received since I have
 “ been accustomed to weep. But perhaps the
 “ Eyes of my Child will be at last opened, and
 “ then she will repent of having despised the
 “ most tender Mother that ever lived.”

Her Grief now prevented her proceeding, and
 her Tears flowed in Abundance. A Mother
 who has been tenderly beloved, easily finds the
 Way to a Heart that only seeks to preserve so
 pleasing a Sensation, and therefore more moved
 by her Tears, than convinced by her Reasons, I
 embraced her with Transport, and begging Par-
 don for my Injustice, only desiring her to allow
 me time to make *Mr. de Maisencourt* agree to
 my Proposal.

“ If you wait for his Consent, she replied,
 “ sighing, I shall never have the Consolation of
 “ living

“ living with a Daughter whom I have always
 “ so tenderly loved : This is doubtless a new
 “ Affliction Heaven has designed for me. You
 “ are without Experience, and do not perceive
 “ that this Man, with all the Sentiments he
 “ makes a Parade of, only designs to deprive
 “ you of your Virtue. Can you imagine that
 “ he will suffer her who is able to secure you
 “ from his Attempts, to be constantly with
 “ you? That he who usurps the Tyrant, and
 “ rules your Mind as he pleases ; that he on
 “ whom you place an implicit Faith, and whom
 “ you fear as if you were an Infant, will easily
 “ lose the Fruit of the Expence he has been at,
 “ and that he will for ever renounce the Empire
 “ you have suffered him to obtain over you?
 “ Assure yourself, my dear *Constantia*, that he
 “ will not so soon let go his Prey : But you
 “ have not Resolution enough to resist him. It
 “ is he, you cannot deny it, that has prejudiced
 “ you against the Abbé and me, and you, my
 “ dear Child, have had so little Esteem for your
 “ Mother, as to suffer yourself to be drawn
 “ away by his Insinuations, and to entertain
 “ Suspicions equally injurious, against two Per-
 “ sons who would do you the greatest Good.”

My Mother knew, that in order to prevail
 on a young Person, she ought rather to soften
 the

the Heart than convince the Judgment. I could not therefore resist her Tears; but assured her, that I would do her all the Justice she could desire, and that I would abandon myself without Reserve to her Advice.

“ If you are sincere, she returned, you will
 “ take no notice of this to Mr. *de Maisencourt*.
 “ I will prepare the little House for you; you
 “ shall sell your Furniture, and we will live
 “ there unknown to the whole World; you
 “ will there be free from the Dangers that beset
 “ your Youth, and I shall be freed from a Ser-
 “ vice that every Day becomes more burthen-
 “ some.”

I consented to every thing except selling the Furniture, which I did not look upon as my own; and on the contrary desired her to send me whatever Cloaths were necessary for me to put on at once, that I might not be obliged to carry any thing away belonging to him whom I abandoned; she agreed, and allowed me two Days to take my Measures.

My Mind had been so misled by my Desire to find Reasons for esteeming a Mother for whom I had an extreme Fondness, that I thought of nothing but the innocent Life I was going to lead. The Pain of quitting Mr. *de Maisencourt* was

the only Sensation capable of imbittering my Joy ; but I hoped to bring my Mother to consent to his coming to see me. I desired however, that he would not come near me till the Day appointed for me to leave him: I could not conquer the Regret of abandoning and deceiving a Man so tender and b  n  ficent. But the Remembrance that he had endeavoured to deceive me ; the Hope of living in a virtuous Security, and my Tenderne  s for my Mother, lent me the Courage I had occasion for.

In short, the Day when I was to set out arrived, and I was congratulating myself on my not having seen Mr. *de Maisencourt*, when he sent up his Name. The total Disorder my Senses were instantly thrown into, may more easily be conceived than described ; however, I did every thing possible to compose my Mind and recollect myself.

“ I am sure, said he, accosting me with great
 “ Gaiety, of being well received to Day ; and
 “ I’ll lay a Wager that my dear *Constantia* will
 “ even embrace me.” “ You seem to be very
 “ much prejudiced in your own Favour,” said I,
 without daring to fix my Eyes upon him ;
 “ what then is the Cause of your having such
 “ mighty Confidence ?” “ It is my bringing
 “ you the best News you can learn, returned
 he.

“ he. The two Days I have not seen you, I
 “ have been wholly employed, in endeavouring
 “ to promote your Peace of Mind. Your Mo-
 “ ther is in no Danger of losing her Liberty.
 “ I have found *Durval's* Brother, who has
 “ signed this Writing, by which he agrees to take
 “ no Measures against her; and as to my Uncle,
 “ he not only promises to do her no Hurt, but
 “ I have prevailed on him to grant her a Pen-
 “ sion, by representing that it was not decent
 “ for him to suffer a Woman who had belong-
 “ ed to him to be reduced to go to Service. And,
 “ on seeing him hesitate, I added, that I was so
 “ jealous of his Glory, that if he would not
 “ give her a Retreat, I would take upon me to
 “ provide for her myself. You, my Dear, may
 “ then tell Mrs. *de Vermont*, that she may chuse
 “ what Convent she pleases, and may depend
 “ on an Annuity of twelve hundred Livres a
 “ Year: And I am ready to give her what
 “ Security she and you can desire. But this is
 “ not all, I have endeavoured to procure for
 “ your Father a Place agreeable to his Taste,
 “ that of Chemist to the Prince of * * * *,
 “ with a Pension of fifty Louis d’Ors, and I
 “ hope I shall soon succeed in it; so that I ima-
 “ gine that from henceforward you will have
 “ nothing to apprehend from them, and your
 “ Repose

“ Repose seems actually secured on an immovable Foundation.”

While he spoke my Eyes flowed with Tears ; and my Oppression became so great that I sunk down on the Couch, covering my Face with my Handkerchief, without being able to make any Reply. He sat by me in the deepest Inquietude, on account of the Cause of my Uneasiness, and the Manner in which I received the Relation of his Proceedings, while my Sighs disjointed the least Words I attempted to pronounce. “ O thou greatest, and most generous of Men !” said I by Intervals, and they would have me betray, abandon—No, I will never consent to it.” Other broken Words escaped me that still more augmented his Fears ; he took hold of one of my Hands, which he pressed between his, and made use of the tenderest Entreaties to engage me to let him know the Cause of my Tears. “ O ! Sir, cried I, I am not worthy the Esteem of so good, so generous a Man.”

Marianne at this Moment informed us that a Woman was come, who said she had Orders to speak to none but me, and to give me a Bundle which she brought with her. I did not then think who this could be ; but as soon as she entered, I recollected the Chambermaid that had conducted me to the House where I found my Mother

Mother when I went to seek for her at the Convent; and instantly saw that this Bundle was what my Mother had agreed to send for me to put on when I was to have gone to her; I bid her lay it down, and stay for my Answer.

As soon as she left the Room I fixed my Eyes on Mr. *de Maisencourt* in such a manner, that he easily discovered I had something of Importance to communicate. “ All I see, and all I hear, said he, prove that you have Secrets kept from me; and what have I done to lose your Confidence? or what must I do to recover it? O, my dear *Constantia*, how afraid am I of penetrating into this Mystery? the little I have perceived makes me tremble. However, if I cannot discover it without knowing that you have ceased to love me, do not pierce my Heart by informing me of such a cruel Truth.—But what do I desire? continued he, seeing my Tears redoubled: “ Can I fear a more distracting Situation than the dreadful Uncertainty I am in at present? Speak freely, my dear *Constantia*, open to me that Heart where Candour and Truth always reside.”

“ Alas! said I, that Heart is unworthy of you. I have had the Weakness to believe my Mother’s Counsels; I have promised to deceive
“ you :

“ you: I durst not speak it, and,—and to abandon you.” My Grief here stopped my Voice.
 “ —See, added I, after a Moment’s Silence,
 “ see the Bundle that contains the Proof of my
 “ Shame.” I then related in a few Words
 what had passed since I saw him. “ I see,
 “ said he, the Ascendency your Mother has
 “ over you; I know your Weakness with respect
 “ to her, it proceeds even to Blindness.”

We opened the Bundle, and found in it an
 Undress neat and elegant, and Linen ornamented
 with the finest Lace; in a Work Bag we found
 an enamelled Watch, a very curious Snuff box,
 and a Purse full of Gold. “ All this is designed,
 “ said Mr. *de Maisencourt*, to make you sensible
 “ of the Difference there is between the
 “ State you are in, and that they promise you.
 “ But is it thus that People treat a Person whom
 “ they assist from a charitable Motive, and
 “ whom they would hinder from giving herself
 “ to the Vanities of this World?” He then
 asked me if I designed to go. “ I will do what
 “ you advise me,” said I, with Tears. At this
 he threw himself at my Feet, and protested that
 I should never have Reason to repent the Preference
 I paid him.

We dismissed the Chambermaid by returning
 the Bundle, and telling her, that I had no Occasion

sion for what it contained. Mr. *de Maisencourt* went directly to offer my Mother the Retreat he had projected for her. She imagined by this Conduct that he feared her, and sought to bring her over to his Interest: Her Answer expressed her Pride and Contempt. Enraged at having her ill Designs discovered, without being attended with Success, she wrote the same Day to the President, to tell him, that if he did not immediately oblige his Nephew to restore her Daughter, she would have Recourse to the Law in order to force him to it.

This Letter produced all the Effects she expected from it: Mr. *de Maisencourt* came to inform me of it.” “ The Reproaches my Uncle
 “ has made me, said he, have been the more
 “ warm, as some Days before he was informed
 “ that I was writing a Work which I intend to
 “ publish. This Discovery has so enraged him
 “ that he has deprived me of the Pension he
 “ allowed me; he thought that my Fondness
 “ for Study was the only Reason that hindered
 “ me from listening to his Ideas of Marriage, and
 “ the Advancement of my Fortune; your Mother’s Letter has put the finishing Stroke to
 “ my Misfortunes. In order to be fully convinced of the Truth of what she has alledged,
 “ he has been to Mrs. *de la Chaise*, to demand
 “ an

“ an Explication. She related your History
 “ after her Manner, and told him that you
 “ were my Mistress : From which he has con-
 “ cluded that you are the principal Obstacle to
 “ his Views, and this has enraged him against
 “ us both.”

We were going to deliberate on the Means
 most proper to be taken, in order to avoid the
 Menaces the President uttered against me, when
 we saw him enter my Apartment ; this unex-
 pected Visit filled me with the extremest Fear.

“ The Madness of turning Author, said he
 “ to his Nephew, on entering the Room, was
 “ not the only thing that prevented your follow-
 “ ing my Advice, and attending to the Improve-
 “ ment of your Fortune, you add to it what-
 “ ever appears most ridiculous to Men of Sense.
 “ What, will you never think of any thing but
 “ how to prevent your Advancement, of con-
 “ demning yourself to Obscurity, and justify-
 “ ing the Severity with which you force me to
 “ treat you ? I will now, however, for the last
 “ Time, give you my Sentiments in a reason-
 “ able and friendly Manner, and I would do it
 “ before her who is in Part the Cause of this
 “ extravagant Folly.” The President here
 took a Chair, and made a Sign to us to follow
 his Example.

“ You

“ You must make Love and write Books !
 “ continued he in a severe and ironical Tone.
 “ Fool ! has not the Customs of the World
 “ shewn you how ridiculous these Things are
 “ capable of making you ? You are descended
 “ from one of the greatest Families of the long
 “ Robe, the Son of one rendered famous by
 “ the Posts he has filled, and the Heir, if you
 “ are willing to be so, of an Estate worth an
 “ hundred thousand Livres a Year, and yet
 “ amuse yourself in turning Author. You might
 “ be the Judge, the *Mecenas* of the Men of
 “ Talents, and you would become their equal.
 “ Leave to Lawyers the perplexing Points in
 “ Civil Law, and to the People of *Parnassus*,
 “ that of multiplying Pamphlets. With them
 “ the Nack of composing is a Way to obtain
 “ Respect ; with us it is a certain Means of
 “ losing that our Station gives us. You must
 “ know that nothing is at present so common as
 “ half Talents, and nothing so uncommon as a
 “ real Genius. Believe me, that to write on
 “ the Laws one ought to be a *Montesquieu* ; to
 “ write Verses, a *Voltaire* ; to write in Prose,
 “ a *Crebillon*, or the *Abbé Prevost*. Can you
 “ flatter yourself with being one of this Class ?
 “ No, I believe not, you would then only en-
 “ crease the Number of those inferior Authors
 “ with which *Paris* abounds.

“ I assert, and will maintain it, that you
 “ would injure your Reputation, even as a
 “ Magistrate, by printing a Book on your own
 “ Profession. Pray, what Idea does a Judge,
 “ who turns Author, give of himself? that of
 “ a Man fond of a System, who is frequently
 “ at a Loss in the Application of the Principles
 “ he is best acquainted with. While you turn
 “ pale with poring over Books, can you cultivate
 “ an Acquaintance with Persons able to con-
 “ tribute either to your Advancement or Repu-
 “ tation? Do you not neglect your Equals,
 “ your Friends, your Superiors? you lose the
 “ most pleasing Profits of your Employment,
 “ the Sollicitations so flattering to all other
 “ Men. I see no Desire, no struggling amongst
 “ the People to have you for their Judge; those
 “ who have Suits at Law already forbear to
 “ wait upon you; the Grass grows in your
 “ Court; and your Antichamber always empty,
 “ proclaims your want of Credit. These are
 “ the Advantages procured you by the Re-
 “ putation to which you seem to aspire, of
 “ being a Man of Learning and Integrity.

“ You tell me that you are not ambitious,
 “ leave this pretended Contempt of Grandeur
 “ to Men without Birth or Fortune: It was in-
 “ vented by the Unhappy to disguise their De-
 “ spair

" spair of ever arriving at it. To what will
 " their Counsels and their Advice lead you?
 " To avoid all those whose Splendour offends
 " them, to keep you within their narrow
 " Sphere, to act contrary to received Opinions,
 " and turn a Magistrate into a Cynic, who is
 " only pleased with Obscurity, and whose Plea-
 " sures are less rational, than that decent Osten-
 " tation which gives a worthy Man a great
 " Part of the Respect he receives from the
 " World."

" What in reality is your Madness in bury-
 " ing yourself alive, and for whom do you
 " do this? for a poor Sempstress. What a
 " blind Infatuation! Can you imagine that
 " Heaven has formed on Purpose for you a Girl
 " in this Station, who is wise, faithful, and ca-
 " pable of a sincere and generous Affection?
 " No, no, you will be treated like all other
 " Lovers of your Stamp. You sketch out a
 " Picture, but you will have the Possession of
 " it no longer than you have made it fit to
 " please others: That is the Custom: She will
 " give you her Esteem, she will make a Scruple
 " of leaving you; but she will leave you,
 " notwithstanding all your Delicacy, and pas-
 " sionate Tendernefs, whenever she can ob-
 " tain a more brilliant Station. You will not
 " pretend

“ pretend to make me believe that you are so
 “ much in love with her as to marry her? The
 “ Force of Sympathy, the Fatality of an insur-
 “ mountable Inclination, cannot, in your Opi-
 “ nion, be sufficient to make me excuse such
 “ Blindness? Prithee then, leave these Mean-
 “ nesses to the Women, and the weak, nar-
 “ row Geniuses, who would by such Things
 “ justify the Folly of their Choice. You know
 “ better than I, that at present all we can dis-
 “ cover of the Passions is, that they are a vari-
 “ able Taste, a Habit, a mere Pretence. I
 “ don’t imagine then that you can carry your
 “ Extravagance so far; and I can’t conceive
 “ what can be the Charm that holds you. Has
 “ *Constantia* given you any Pledges of her Love?
 “ added he, in a low Voice; tell me freely,
 “ and to-morrow I will provide handsomely
 “ both for the Mother and the Children.”

I blushed, and Mr. *de Maisencourt* was going
 to interrupt his Uncle, in order to destroy the
 injurious Suspicions he had just discovered, but
 the President imposed Silence upon him, by con-
 tinuing to speak with the same Eagerness.

“ Hear me till I have done, said he, and then
 “ you shall justify yourself if you can. Re-
 “ collect yourself, and consider that a Man in
 “ your Station ought to avoid raising a Suspi-
 “ cion

" cion of his being capable not only of marry-
 " ing, but of loving an insignificant Girl. Ex-
 " cuse me, Child, for speaking so bluntly be-
 " fore you, continued he, addressing his Dis-
 " course to me. The Evil is extreme, and
 " there is a Necessity for violent Remedies.
 " What, I offer you my Post, added he, turn-
 " ing to the Side where his Nephew sat; I offer
 " you my Estate, a lovely Woman, an Alliance
 " with a great Family, and you despise these
 " Advantages. You might become the Con-
 " solation of my old Age, and you determine
 " to be its Reproach. Instead of acting the
 " Part which your Birth and Fortune demand;
 " you come here to play that of the insipid
 " Lover. Twenty Women of Quality would
 " dispute your Conquest, when like a new
 " *Celedon* you become infatuated with the sub-
 " lime Pleasure of reigning over the Heart of a
 " poor Girl; though you ought to be sensible,
 " that Persons in a mean State, when we cannot
 " raise them up to us, draw us down to them,
 " and that a mean abject State of Mind is the
 " Fruit that proceeds from such a Connection."

" This is what Reason, Decency and Ho-
 " nour have forced me to observe. I love you
 " enough to endeavour to save you in spite of
 " yourself, from the Faults you are falling into,

mind "

N &

and

“ and from the Shame with which you would
 “ cover me.”

“ And you, *Constantia*, added he, looking
 “ at me, excuse my Warmth, that may have
 “ hurried me into some offensive Expressions,
 “ and allow me to speak to you in the same
 “ friendly Manner I have done to my Nephew ;
 “ for you have both need of being informed of
 “ your true Interest. You are young, and
 “ formed to inspire Love ; you ought not then
 “ to try the Power of your Charms on one who
 “ can only share a moderate Fortune with you.
 “ He is a Victim unworthy of you ; for you
 “ will ruin him without enriching yourself.
 “ Since Fortune obliges you to improve the
 “ Advantages Nature has given you, why don’t
 “ you chuse Men who have all that Wealth
 “ that is necessary to do you the Service you
 “ deserve ? Your Person entitles you to aspire
 “ to the most splendid Conquests, instead of
 “ living buried in Obscurity with a Lover in a
 “ moderate Situation ; instead of losing your
 “ Youth in cherishing noble Sentiments, take
 “ a bolder Flight ; appear at Court and at Places
 “ of Diversion, and I will insure you the greatest
 “ Success. Do yourself Justice then, and ac-
 “ knowledge the immense Injury you do both
 “ to yourself and my Nephew ; and if you love
 “ him

“ him with a disinterested Affection, join with
 “ me in recovering him from his Delusion ; but
 “ if you still suffer him to indulge his Passion,
 “ you shall suffer for it. Don’t therefore depend
 “ on the Moderation I now treat you with,
 “ for I am able to proceed to the greatest Ex-
 “ tremities. To-day I speak to you like a Fa-
 “ ther, to-morrow will shew me to you in a
 “ very different Light. If you give any Credit
 “ to what I say, you will not force me to pu-
 “ nish you both for the Contempt you throw
 “ on my Friendship.”

“ If in the Reproaches you have made me,
 “ replied Mr. *de Maisencourt* mildly, I only
 “ found Reason to regret the Loss of the For-
 “ tune you would deprive me of, my Respect
 “ for you would perhaps have led me at once
 “ to condemn the Faults you find in me: But
 “ on the one Hand you tax me with Ingratitude
 “ and Insensibility ; and on the other, I find you
 “ in an Opinion as disadvantageous, as I dare
 “ say it is unjust, with respect to a Person
 “ worthy of both your Esteem and mine ; I
 “ cannot therefore, when called by such press-
 “ ing Motives, refuse to undertake both my
 “ Justification and her’s.

“ Your Friendship for me makes you fear,
 “ that my writing a Work on my own Pro-

“ fession will injure me in the Opinion of the
 “ World, and that I shall suffer by it, even as
 “ a Magistrate, in causing it to be printed.
 “ Suffer me, Sir, first to observe, that I have
 “ no settled Design to let my Productions ever
 “ see the Light ; and if I had, I should not
 “ chuse to be known to be their Author : For
 “ tho’ I should be far from blushing at this
 “ Title, I respect the Prejudice that forces me
 “ to conceal myself. The Men whose Judg-
 “ ment you make me afraid of, regard solid
 “ Endowments as ridiculous, why do not they
 “ blush therefore at having useful Talents ?
 “ You, however, are not ignorant, that one,
 “ in what Rank soever he thinks himself, is de-
 “ graded by cultivating those he has received
 “ from Nature. All Degrees honour Men of
 “ Letters ; and of how many excellent Works
 “ should we have been deprived, if the Fears
 “ you are under on my Account had been capa-
 “ ble of stopping the Flight of the Magistrates
 “ who have discovered that they were born to
 “ enlighten the Age ? Would the President *de*
 “ *Montesquieu*, whom you have mentioned,
 “ have dared to give us that admirable Work,
 “ *The Spirit of Laws*, which will make it one
 “ Day said, that in an Age of Folly, frivolous
 “ Pursuits, and trifling Talents, there appeared
 “ in the same Man the great Genius, the pro-
 “ found

“ found Philosopher, the wise Politician, and
 “ the elegant Writer? There are others too
 “ who have greatly distinguished themselves;
 “ and I am sensible that I ought not to have a
 “ Confidence equal to theirs, till I have a Ca-
 “ pacity like them; but tho’ I am not tempted
 “ to draw a Parallel between my Talents and
 “ those of such great Men, they will at least
 “ justify my Endeavours to imitate them.”

“ But from the Plan of Life I have formed,
 “ I shall continue, you say, without Credit.
 “ Cannot a Magistrate then obtain Reputation
 “ any other Way than by a Grandeur of Ap-
 “ pearance? I am not ignorant that an outside
 “ Shew contributes to our obtaining it: But
 “ how superior is that which a Man obtains
 “ only by his Knowledge and Probity! Do
 “ you reckon for nothing the Advantage of
 “ learning by the Study of the Laws, and by
 “ that of the human Heart, the great Art of
 “ rendering ourselves Masters of the Opinions
 “ of Men; and by what Means can we arrive
 “ at it, if not by a Habit of diving into the
 “ Civil Law, of discussing Proofs, combining
 “ Reasons, and unfolding the Relation of Prin-
 “ ciples? By this we preserve ourselves from
 “ being led astray by the Address of the Council;
 “ and the Sophisms of litigious Persons.

“ You tell me, in short, that Study will
 “ deprive me of the social Qualities. Is it then
 “ impossible to join the Love of Society to the
 “ Desire of Instruction ? Is a laborious Judge
 “ always unfociable ? I love Company ; I have
 “ ever studied to render mine agreeable, and
 “ to perform for my Friends whatever could be
 “ expected from a tender and beneficent Mind :
 “ But I cannot resolve to offer Incense to Folly,
 “ to yield to puerile Compliances, or to make
 “ use of the other little Arts of obtaining Credit.
 “ I would acquire the Esteem of Men by no
 “ other Means, than by letting them see that I
 “ deserve it ; and I shall always prefer the Ap-
 “ probation of a single Person, whose Soul,
 “ whose Manners and Capacity I am acquainted
 “ with, to the little Success I might obtain in
 “ the brilliant Circles of whose Judgment you
 “ would have me stand in awe. Nature has
 “ not endued me with that Suppleness you re-
 “ quire from me, I therefore cannot follow
 “ the Models you seem to propose for my Imi-
 “ tation. Would you have me resemble Men
 “ who have neither any settled Virtues nor
 “ Vices ? It is surely better to have a rigid
 “ Character, than to have none at all. Every
 “ one has his peculiar Manner of thinking,
 “ and I have acquired the happy Art of desiring
 “ nothing that would cost me too much to ob-
 “ tain

"tain it. An honest Mediocrity, supported
 "by good Conduct, and Expences proportion-
 "able to the Rank we hold, is the Happiness
 "of a wise Man ; it is mine ; and a Man of
 "Sense need never blush at it. Such, Sir, are
 "my Sentiments on the Reproaches you have
 "made me, in regard to my Love for the
 "Sciences, and my little Ambition. I should
 "believe that I was wanting in my Duty both to
 "you and myself, had I concealed them from
 "the Hope of making an Advantage of your
 "Kindness.

"I shall speak with the same Freedom of this
 "young Lady. You know that her Parents
 "have left her without Resource ; but you are
 "ignorant of the Efforts she has made to de-
 "liver herself from the Dangers that surround
 "a young Person in a State of Indigence. The
 "most dreadful Fate has always appeared to her
 "preferable to the Loss of her Virtue. 'Tis
 "true, I have been so happy as to procure her
 "some Assistance ; but I could not do this with-
 "out deceiving her, it was under Mrs. *de la*
 "*Chaise's* Name that I made her accept it ; and
 "tho' she still consents to make use of it, it is
 "only till she has recovered the Fortune of which
 "her Grandfather's Resentment has deprived
 "her. Do her then more Justice, Sir, and do

“ not make the Unhappiness of her Situation a
 “ Crime. Tho’ her Misfortune should not in
 “ your Opinion render her worthy of Respect,
 “ the Purity of her Manners and Sentiments
 “ would entitle her to your Esteem. Thus my
 “ Attachment to her is not the Effect of Fata-
 “ lity, but the Fruit of Discernment. When
 “ I compare *Constantia* with other Women,
 “ what a Contrast is there between them ! In
 “ her is united the most lovely Soul, a Heart
 “ capable of the most tender Affection, a Mind
 “ improved by Cultivation, and the most en-
 “ gaging Person. In her Conversation, I at the
 “ same Time enjoy the Delight which Women
 “ only are capable of communicating in a social
 “ Converse; and all the Solidity of that of
 “ Men : In her I find an honest Man, a true
 “ Friend, and one capable of giving Happiness
 “ to the most delicate Lover : And yet you
 “ are astonished that I make her Interest a mat-
 “ ter of Importance to me !—But you yourself,
 “ Sir, are more capable of doing her Justice
 “ than any one else. You have known her
 “ from her Infancy, and I have often heard
 “ you speak in her Praise: Be persuaded then
 “ that the good Qualities you then only saw in
 “ their Bud, have made their full Growth, and
 “ are arisen to Perfection : She is then worthy
 “ of my Choice, and capable of constituting my
 “ Felicity ;

“ Felicity ; why then will you not allow me
 “ the Liberty of being happy my own Way ? ”

These Praises will doubtless appear very ill placed as proceeding from my Pen : but condescend, Madam, to remember, that in all this I am only an Historian, and am consequently obliged to give you an exact Account of every thing.

“ You see then, Sir, continued Mr. *de Mai-*
 “ *soncourt*, that if I had the Sentiments you
 “ suppose, if I despised your Benefits and Friend-
 “ ship, nothing could have stopped me, and
 “ that I might have found plausible Reasons for,
 “ justifying my Conduct. But whatever Esteem
 “ I have for *Constantia*, it will never make me
 “ forget the Respect I owe to you ; and tho’ I
 “ should here fail, she would be the first in
 “ calling me back to it. But while I do Justice,
 “ to the Nobleness of her Sentiments, my Ho-
 “ nour is concerned in preventing her falling a
 “ Victim to them. I am therefore forced to
 “ declare, that if you make use of any cruel Pro-
 “ ceedings against her, there is nothing that I
 “ will not do to recompence her. Your For-
 “ tune would certainly be of great Advantage
 “ to me ; but on such an Occasion I should
 “ only be sensible of the Loss of your Esteem ;
 “ deprive me then of the Advantage of being

“ your Heir, grant me your Friendship, and I
 “ shall be at the Height of my Wishes. O my
 “ Uncle ! instead of endeavouring to disturb
 “ our Repose, encrease our Felicity by conde-
 “ scending to share in it. You have a Taste
 “ for rational Pleasures ; you are fond of Per-
 “ sons of Genius, and a sincere Cordiality ;
 “ come then amongst us, and you will here
 “ find all these Advantages. You know *Ber-*
 “ *ville* ; you have been often amused by his
 “ agreeable Gaiety. You will here be Master,
 “ we shall make it our Happiness to please :
 “ You yourself are so capable of giving Charms
 “ to our Society, that” -- “ There wanted nothing
 “ to complete your Extravagance, but your en-
 “ deavouring to make me share in it, cried the
 “ President, rising abruptly : But since soft
 “ Measures will not cure this Frenzy, added he,
 “ looking at me with his Eyes sparkling with
 “ Anger, we will employ those of a different
 “ Kind.”

I was filled with Consternation at this Menace,
 and whatever Confidence Mr. *de Maisencourt*
 affected to assume, I perceived that, he was no
 more at Ease than myself. The Care of pro-
 viding for my Safety was what appeared the
 most pressing ; it was therefore agreed that I
 should immediately remove to a different Part
 of

of the Town, and that Mr. *de Maisencourt* should endeavour to bring his Uncle to less violent Resolutions. I concealed from him as much as possible, the Uneasiness I felt at being treated by the President with such Contempt, while he, on his Side, endeavoured to make me forget it, by the tender Respect with which he treated me; but this could not prevent my feeling, in the most sensible Manner, the Unhappiness of my Situation.

My Mother did not long enjoy the Effects of her Ill-will to me: For the Woman she had made her Confidant in the Scheme she had projected with the Abbé, betrayed her, and her Person was seized: I was told that the Abbé's Relations had caused her to be conducted to a Castle in *Provence*, where she was kept close Prisoner. But tho' I placed no Confidence in this Story, I could not help thinking that she was in an unhappy State; and I endeavoured in vain to discover the Place of her Confinement.

Scarce had she disappeared when my Father gave me fresh Uneasiness. I had not seen him since I left his House, and as I feared his committing some Piece of Extravagance, I had made no Haste to inform him of the Place of my Abode: But one Day he entered my Apartment at an Hour when I least expected him, attended
by

by the President's old Porter. His Presence surprised me as much as the Company in which I saw him. He appeared worthy of Compassion ; for his Coat, his Linen, and his meager Look, bespoke him to be a Man extremely ill at Ease. I blushed, not at his Poverty, but at the Air of Opulence I had in Comparison of him.

His meeting *Marianne* in the Anti-chamber began to put him in an ill Humour. I treated him, however, with all the Politeness and Respect that was his Due, and of which I knew that he was very jealous. " You see, said he " to *Saint-John*, that they have not deceived " me ; the Daughter has followed the Example " of the Mother." " Yes," replied the other with a malicious and rustic Air ; " the one belonged to the Uncle, and the other is the Nephew's ; they keep in the same Family. I " have heard, added my Father, that my " worthy Wife was here : As she could no " longer get Employment, she doubtless procures it for her dear Daughter. Have you " then both forgot that you belong to me, and " that with one Word I could cause you to be " shut up for the rest of your Days ? But you " don't deserve to have me take the least Concern about you ; I leave this to the Police, " from

“ from whence you may expect the Reward of
 “ your Actions.”

I assured my Father, that his Wife had never lived with me. “ That does not signify much
 “ to me,” replied he, casting a curious Look on all the Furniture: “ It is very certain that I
 “ may take my own wherever I find it. These
 “ are precisely the very Hangings my Wife took
 “ from me, that Glass and this Table are not
 “ unknown to me: Don’t you remember to
 “ have seen them at my House?” added he, looking at *Saint John*, who replied in a manner conformable to his Desires. “ Well, help me
 “ then, rejoined he, to take this down, and to
 “ carry it away: The Money I shall get for it,
 “ added to that you will lend me, will at last
 “ enable me to make that miraculous Experiment
 “ riment that will astonish the Universe, and
 “ procure me both a splendid Fortune and immortal Honour.”

I endeavoured to make my Father sensible of his Error; but he strove without listening to me to pull down the Tapestry. *Marianne*, who had heard all that was said, could not contain herself: She would have fallen upon him; I stopped her, and took her into the Anti-chamber to deliberate on the Part we had to take. My first Thought was to offer my Father all the
 Money

Money I had, to prevent his executing his Design. " Pray don't, said she, this will then be
 " a Tax he will think he has a Right to require,
 " and he will be always coming here to lay you
 " under Contribution. Mr. *de la Salle*, our
 " Landlord, is disposed to serve us. He is of a
 " Stature and Resolution sufficient to make your
 " Father, and him he has with him, tremble. I
 " will go and desire him to come up, and to
 " use the Right he has to prevent any thing
 " being taken out of his House." I consented,
 desiring her to engage him not to make use
 of the least Violence. He in fact came up
 Stairs, and spoke with great Resolution.

Neither my Father nor his Companion dared
 to reply; he only said with a forced Laugh,
 that what he had done was only to divert him-
 self at my Expence. " However that be, Gen-
 " tlemen," added Mr. *de la Salle*, on his leaving
 the Room; " I would not advise you to play
 " the same Game over again; for I won't suffer
 " any body to come and disturb my Lodgers."

" I find, said my Father, as soon as he
 " saw him on the Stairs, that you have every
 " thing in order; you have your Bawd and
 " your Bully: Nothing can be better, Child,
 " you should only have informed that Man
 " that he should not affront your Father in your
 " Presence;

“ Presence ; but nothing is too much to expect
 “ from a Wh——.”

With what Shame did his Speeches cover me ! I would have died to avoid them. A Person without Experience would think a Girl in my Situation extremely happy ; but is there an honest Woman who would for all the Happiness she could form any Idea of, be exposed to the least of the Mortifications I then suffered ?

But let us talk of a more agreeable Subject ; my Father rejoined, giving *Saint-John* a Slap on the Shoulder ; “ let us call for Wine and
 “ cheer up our Hearts ; there is no Occasion for
 “ Ceremony here ; you may be as free at the
 “ House of a Lady of Pleasure as at a Tavern.” By what Means could I oppose so many Outrages ? I sunk into a Chair in the most bitter Grief. *Saint-John* perceived the Uneasiness this Discourse gave me, and said that he had rather go to the Tavern over the Way. “ Well
 “ then, said my Father, Miss shall go along
 “ with us to keep you Company ; for I know
 “ that you have been a Wag in your Time,
 “ and was always fond of a pretty Girl.”

I endeavoured to avoid following them as much as it was possible ; but my Father took hold of my Arm and dragged me along in spite of
 of

of myself. *Marianne* would have endeavoured to deliver me ; but I feared a Storm like that I had already suffered on an Occasion that had some Resemblance to this : I therefore desired her to make no Noise, but to shut the Doors, and wait near the Tavern as long as I stayed. On my entering it I went into the Bar, and sat with the Mistress of the House, while my Father and *Saint-John* drank at a Table close to it.

I was surprized to see to what a Degree the Passions are capable of degrading us, when we deliver ourselves up to them without Reserve ; for then none of the Means of gratifying them appear either unjust or mortifying. My Father was affable, polite and fawning to *Saint-John* ; the Names of his Companion and his best Friend appeared too weak to express the Regard he had for him, or rather to prevail on him to lend him Money ; but I should have been less astonished at his thus debasing himself, had I known, that there is no Meanness which many of our Men of Quality do not scruple to put in practice in the like Case.

We had been there near an Hour, when my Father, who was already become pretty merry, resolved to do me the Honour to make me drink with him ; he therefore gave me a Glass, and ordered me to drink the Health of his dear Friend.

Saint-

Saint-John; and the Hostess was no more exempted from this Ceremony than I. She was tolerably handsome, and I saw my Father, for the first Time, behave with Gallantry. After having said many obliging Things, that had a Tincture of his favourite Studies, he offered to electrize her whenever she should think proper; but as she had never heard this Word before, she imagined that he made her a very different Proposal, and appeared almost affronted: I however calmed her rising Anger, by explaining, as well as I was able, the Nature of Electricity.

My Father, offended at finding a living Creature ignorant even of the Name of so wonderful a Property in Matter, arose from the Table, shrugging up his Shoulders, and bursting into loud Fits of Laughter, that were very offensive to the Hostess. As to *Saint-John*, he came to inform me that he should go the next Day to the President's Country-House, and that he would not fail to tell him that he had had the Honour of drinking with me at the Silver Tower.

I could not avoid foreseeing, that a Story of this Kind would greatly prejudice him against me: I therefore desired *Saint-John*, in the most earnest Manner, not to mention me to him, assuring him that the President would not hear of

of it with Pleasure, since he had Reason to complain of our Family. “ Why, replied he, he
 “ found your Mother very obliging. I don’t
 “ say this to offend you, Mr. *de Vermont*, added
 “ he, turning to my Father, for we know that
 “ you Men of Learning don’t disturb yourselves
 “ about such Trifles. I say, continued he,
 “ that if my Master has esteemed your Mother,
 “ he cannot be displeased at seeing that his Ne-
 “ phew has the Daughter. Mr. *de Maisencourt*
 “ is a very gallant Gentleman, and that you
 “ know better than any body else, Miss; he
 “ does not amuse himself with electrizing the
 “ Women, does he now ?”

My Father, by calling to *Saint-John*, to my no small Satisfaction, put an End to his Discourse, and they sat down to drink, not without frequent Exclamations on the Ignorance of the People who knew nothing of Electricity. *Saint John* confessed that he had often heard talk of it, but that he never could comprehend what it meant. While my Father endeavoured to explain this Phenomenon, I seized the Opportunity of leaving a Place where I was so disagreeably situated.

I gave Mr. *de Maisencourt* an Account of this Event the first Time he came to see me. He then informed me that he had obtained for my
 Father

Father the Place he had spoke to me about.

“ ’Tis plain, added he, that Mr. *de Vermont*
 “ is drove to these Extremities only by the De-
 “ fire of gratifying his reigning Taste; you
 “ will then, since he is provided for, be for-
 “ ever secured from the Danger of suffering the
 “ like disagreeable Adventures. In regard to
 “ your Fears in relation to my Uncle, you may
 “ be perfectly easy on his Account; for he is
 “ setting out for his Country Seat, where he
 “ stays a Month, and takes with him Mr. *de*
 “ *Berville*, who will do us all the Service in
 “ his Power.”

But I was not yet at the End of the Humi-
 liations for which I was reserved. The Cheva-
 lier, whom I had known at Mrs. *Desbordes's*,
 endeavoured to discover the Place of my Abode;
 he got Information where I was, and I was one
 Day astonished at seeing him enter in spite of
Marianne, who refused to give him Admission.

“ I don't know by what Right you require Ad-
 “ mission here,” said I, enraged at the Rude-
 ness with which he had treated my Servant.
 “ How! said he, coming up to embrace me,
 “ you think then to impose upon me by that
 “ Air of Dignity. Go, Child, I know your
 “ Affairs as well as you do yourself; and I
 “ can't help laughing very heartily, when I re-

“ collect

“ collect that I have been such a Fool as to
 “ treat you with such Delicacy. Are you not
 “ *Maisoncourt's* Mistress? continued he, chuck-
 “ ing me under the Chin; he is not here, is
 “ he? Well, I will be his Substitute. A Mus-
 “ quetier is as good as a Counsellor; here's
 “ Gold, send and get a Supper for us.

I don't imagine, Sir, said I, with a Voice
 interrupted with Anger and Fear, that you have
 any Right to come and insult me in my Apart-
 ment; and if you don't immediately depart,
 you may repent of your treating me in such a
 Manner. At this *Marianne* protested that she
 would go and call Assistance: When he re-
 plied, in an Air of Raillery, “ Here me, Child,
 “ don't be such a Fool as to bring yourself into
 “ Trouble; if you oblige me to make a Noise
 “ here, you will expose yourself and your Ser-
 “ vant to the Danger of going to lodge at
 “ *St. Martin's*; I think you had better accept
 “ of the Proposal I make you: Therefore go
 “ quietly, and do what I bid you: You won't
 “ be sorry for it, for I pay like an Abbé. Two
 “ of my Companions are waiting in a neigh-
 “ bouring Coffee-house, while I am come to
 “ reconnoitre the Place: I would have them
 “ see that you are richly deserving of the Inclination
 “ of an honest Man; and I am in-
 “ chanted

“ chanted at finding you more handsome than
 “ ever. You will find, that if you are not a
 “ Fool, we shall pass a Part of the Night very
 “ agreeably.” He then turned to his Servant,
 and ordered him to go and bring the two
 other Musquetiers he had mentioned; and
 then turning to me again, he added, “ *A*
 “ *propos*, carry your Complaisance now to the
 “ Height; and send and get for us two of your
 “ handsome Companions, that each of us may
 “ have one. I set out to Night for *Flanders*,
 “ and I would take my leave of *Paris* with a
 “ glorious Frolic.”

Terrified as I was at this Discourse, I had
 the Presence of Mind to reply that I would not
 go far; but that if he would sit down I would
 search the House for what he wanted. I was de-
 lighted at finding this Pretence for running
 down to Mrs. *de la Salle*; but no sooner en-
 tered the Room where she was, than I shut the
 Door in the greatest Terror. I could scarce ex-
 plain the Reason of the extreme Disorder I was
 in; however, Mrs. *de la Salle* was soon in-
 formed of it, by the Account *Marianne* came to
 give us, that the three Men were in my Apart-
 ment, and that they threatened to destroy the
 Furniture if I did not speedily return. We had
 none but Women to guard the House, and all
 we

we could do was to shut ourselves up as carefully as possible. They would have sent for the Watch; but I prevented them, from a Fear that this Step would make the Affair more public. The Chevalier, enraged at finding I had escaped from him, abused *Marianne*, overturned a Tea-table covered with very fine China, broke a Glass, tore the Window-Curtains, and stabbed with his Sword a Picture drawn with Crayons, that had been presented me by Mr. *de Maisencourt*. The Neighbours who would have opposed them could not succeed; for being supported by his two Friends and their Domestics, they all went away before they were able to seize them.

I immediately wrote to Mr. *de Maisencourt*, to ask his Advice how to behave; but the only Answer he made, was by telling *Marianne* that he hoped she would conceal the least Circumstance of what had passed with the greatest Care, and desire me to wait for News from him. I waited indeed till Midnight, but to no Purpose, and I did not see him till late the next Day. I could not help reproaching him for the Coldness he shewed on such an extraordinary Occasion; when he replied before *Marianne*, that he was not so guilty as I imagined, since he was obliged that Morning to report a Cause for Persons of great

great Distinction, and that it was necessary he should sacrifice his own Repose, and the Interest of his dearest Friends, to the Duties of his Employment. The Manner in which I received his Excuse let him see that I was not at all satisfied with it: But as soon as we were alone, he added, “ I believe I may now give
 “ you an Account of my Conduct. It was
 “ nine o’Clock last Night when I received your
 “ Letter. I immediately saw what I had to do ; I
 “ gave such Orders to my Men as were necessary
 “ to raise a Belief that I should go to Bed at
 “ ten, on Account of the Cause I was to re-
 “ port the next Day. My Coachman alone
 “ was intrusted with the Secret, for he is a
 “ Man on whom I can safely depend ; I or-
 “ dered him to take out my Post-Chaise under
 “ some Pretence or other, and to go and wait
 “ for me. As soon as my Servants had Reason
 “ to believe me asleep, I went out of my Gar-
 “ den Door, with a Design to speak with the
 “ Chevalier. At Midnight, I saw him come
 “ out on Horseback with a Domestic, who
 “ ran before him. I followed him, and the
 “ Moon shining very bright, I did not lose
 “ sight of him a Moment. When we were
 “ about a League from the City, and I saw his
 “ Servant at a sufficient Distance, I seized this
 “ Moment to stop up his Way. As soon as
 “ he

“ he knew me, he guessed what I had to say to
 “ him, and prepared with a very good Grace
 “ to make a Reply : The Conversation was
 “ not long, I returned to Bed without being
 “ perceived, and this Morning I have reported
 “ my Cause.”

I trembled at this Relation, and durst not
 ask him the least Question : For I was in an In-
 stant seized with the most dreadful Apprehen-
 sions lest he should be wounded ; but the Tran-
 quillity with which he spoke to me gave me
 Courage ; however, I was going to reproach
 him for his having, to revenge me, thus ha-
 zarded a Life that was dearer to me than my
 own, when Mr. *Desbordes* sent up his Name ;
 On his entering the Room he told me that he
 was come to beg my Pardon for him who had
 so grievously offended me ; “ the Chevalier’s
 “ Friends came yesterday, said he, to inform
 “ me of the Complaints you had to make
 “ against him, and I see that there are still left
 “ the Traces of his Fury. I don’t doubt, Sir,
 “ added he, looking at Mr. *de Maisencourt*,
 “ but that you would pursue this Affair very
 “ warmly ; but by an Event, which nobody
 “ can yet comprehend, you are already re-
 “ venged. I am just now arrived from *St.*
 “ *Dennis*, where I left the Chevalier wounded

“ in two Places, by a Man whom he will not
 “ name, and of whom he gives the highest
 “ Praises. I hope your Generosity will be
 “ moved by the Unhappiness of his Situation.
 “ Though there is more Folly in his Beha-
 “ viour, than any settled Design to injure you,
 “ I am sensible that he has deserved your Re-
 “ sentment : I durst not mention the great In-
 “ terest I take in his Concerns ; you know that
 “ I am his best Friend, and I beg the young
 “ Lady would be my Advocate, for she will
 “ doubtless suffer herself to be moved by my
 “ Entreaties.”

Mr. *de Maisencourt* appeared at first enexora-
 ble ; but this was only the better to remove all
 Cause of the Suspicion he might have of him.
 In short, being touched by Mr. *Desbordes's*
 Arguments, we took in concert, the necessary
 Measures to stifle this unhappy Affair. The
 Chevalier recovered of his Wounds, behaved
 afterwards with more Discretion, and became a
 Friend to him who had punished him for his
 Imprudence.

Though I trembled whenever I call'd to mind
 the Danger Mr. *de Maisencourt* had run, I was
 delighted at my having received such a strong
 Proof of his Love ; but the Satisfaction I felt
 from it, did not compensate for the Uproar the
 Chevalier had made at my Lodgings. It seemed

as if, since my having consented to make use of the Assistance of the Man I loved, every thing had united to punish me. I would no longer suffer the Uneasiness to which I had been from this time exposed, and therefore took a firm Resolution to quit the State I was in.

“ Whatever Efforts you make, said I to Mr.
 “ *de Maisencourt*, to place me in a State of
 “ Tranquillity, my Parents will always believe
 “ that they have a Right to disturb me, as long
 “ as Appearances are against me: You must be
 “ sensible that if I keep up a Correspondence
 “ with a Man in a State so superior to mine,
 “ and continue to live alone, their Menaces
 “ will always appear to be just. ’Tis true Mrs.
 “ *de la Salle* has for some Time past made no
 “ Scruple of giving me her Company; for the
 “ Manner in which I behave has convinced her
 “ of the Innocence and Purity of our Friend-
 “ ship; but that is not sufficient to satisfy my
 “ Delicacy, and undeceive the Public. It is
 “ said that the Testimony of our own Con-
 “ science is sufficient to render us happy; but I
 “ every Day perceive that there is a Necessity for
 “ adding to it the Esteem of those about us. Our
 “ Reputation depends on the Opinions of others,
 “ and not on our own; and can we be happy
 “ while we know that we lie under the Suspi-
 “ cion of leading an irregular Life? I would
 “ then,

“ then, Sir, in order to quit a State in which I
 “ have already suffered so many Disgraces, renew
 “ my Endeavours that my Grandfather may not
 “ die before he has established us in our Rights,
 “ in such a Manner as to secure the Effects of
 “ the Good-will he has already shewn to us. If
 “ my Father will not give himself the Trouble
 “ to accomplish it, cannot he make over his
 “ Powers to you? There must certainly be Laws
 “ that prohibit Obsession and Tyranny, and my
 “ Brother-in-law ought not to continue unpun-
 “ nished, while he keeps a Person in his Power
 “ who has perfectly recovered his Senses. I have
 “ already entertained Hopes of owing the Reco-
 “ very of my Fortune to your Zeal to serve me.
 “ Perhaps the new Attempt that I propose will
 “ be more successful than the first. If it be ne-
 “ cessary to sue my Sister and her Husband, as
 “ you are more sensible than any one else of the
 “ Justice of my Cause, I hope your supporting it
 “ will be attended with Success; and till my
 “ Fate be determined, I entreat you to be at the
 “ same Expence in supporting me in a Convent,
 “ as you are at here. This is the only Means of
 “ sheltering me from the Effects of my Mother’s
 “ Resentment, and my Father’s Menaces. They
 “ may either of them be led to make use of vio-
 “ lent Measures against me; and tho’ they should
 “ not, the very fear of suffering will always be

“ sufficient to imbitter all the Moments of my
“ Life.”

Mr. *de Maisencourt* was obliged to confess, that the Part I propos'd was the only one I ought to take. If any thing could increase my Confidence in him, it was the generous Manner in which he consented to satisfy me, even at the Expence of his Love.

We found some Difficulty in accelerating my Entrance into a Convent, when he perceiving the Uneasiness this Delay gave me, “ O *Con-*
“ *stantia*, said he, how cruel is this Desire to
“ leave me ! Does it give you Pain to think of
“ the trifling Services I have done you ? They
“ would perhaps be less disagreeable did they pro-
“ ceed from another Hand.” “ Was this the
“ Case, replied I, you would have a Right to
“ charge me with Injustice. Do you think I
“ would receive the least Assistance from you, if
“ I did not love you ; or fly from you, if I could
“ live without Danger in the State I am in ? The
“ Enterprizes of my Parents are perhaps what I
“ ought least to dread.” “ You shall never have
“ any thing to fear from them, said he with
“ Eagerness, I know how to ward off all the
“ Blows they can level against you ; and as to
“ me, the distant Respect with which I have
“ hitherto treated you, ought surely to dissipate
“ all your Fears. Is not this the best Security
“ for

“ for my Conduct? If you had the least Love
 “ for me, added he, sighing, would you have suf-
 “ ficient Strength, sufficient Courage, to form
 “ and execute Resolutions so opposite to the Sen-
 “ sations of my Heart, as those are that I see you
 “ taking? You say that you love me, but no
 “ Part of my Behaviour justifies the Apprehen-
 “ sions you have of me.”

The Preparations for the Cause depending
 lasted some time; and during this Interval we
 lived in a Manner that gave me no Reason to
 complain of Mr. *de Maisencourt's* Behaviour. We
 had generally with us Mr. *de Berville* and Mrs.
de la Salle, a Woman of an excellent Character,
 and a well cultivated Mind. We spent our Af-
 ternoons without calling in the Assistance of play
 to pass away the Time; we communicated to
 the Society the Effects of our reading; the Anec-
 dotes of the Day, and News from the Theatres,
 frequently afforded us very entertaining Subjects
 for Conversation. Mr. *de Berville* sometimes did
 us the Honour to consult us on the Plan of some
 agreeable Piece. At other Times Books of Wit
 were the Subject of our Discourse. Sincere Friend-
 ship, innocent Mirth, and the unrestrained Over-
 flowings of the Heart, filled up our Time. We
 sometimes went together to Places of public Di-
 version, and at others took a Walk. Happy Days,
 only designed perhaps to give me a Taste of Fe-
 licity,

licity, that for the rest of my Life I might have a keener Sense of its Loss.

I very rarely saw Mrs. *de la Chaise* since Mrs. *de la Salle* allowed me her Company. Mr. *de Maisencourt* had made the Remark, and indeed I myself had recollected, that her Company could not fail of doing me hurt, and she herself was not sorry that I seldom visited her. Mr. *Dutertre* at last unhappily discovered her Fondness for the young Count, and after having several Times complained of it to no Purpose, entirely left her; and all the Measures she took to repair her Loss proving ineffectual, she was soon reduced to a State of Indigence. On this Occasion I went to see her, in order to offer her some Assistance, both from myself and Mr. *de Maisencourt*, but she denied herself several Times; and I plainly saw, that the Reason of her acting in this Manner proceeded from her dreading the Mortification of appearing before me in a State of Indigence. I then wrote to her, but she returned me no Answer; and at last I was informed that she had changed her Lodgings, and was gone to conceal her Poverty in the Suburbs, where it was impossible for me to find her. This is generally the End of all who resemble her; but tho' this was the natural Consequence of Vice, and there was a kind of Justice in her Fate, I could not refuse my Tears to her Misfortunes; for the Services she

she has rendered me will always lie near my Heart.

It was not long before the Tranquillity we then enjoyed became embittered. The Sister to the Lady who was proposed to Mr. *de Maisencourt* died, by which Means she that survived became a better Match than he could reasonably hope for; and yet this Event did not change the Dispositions of her Relations in his Favour. The President being informed of their Perseverance, pressed him more warmly than ever to give him a decisive Answer, threatening him with his warmest Resentment if he persisted in his Refusal, and again offering to resign his Office to him, and to make him Heir to all he possessed if he accepted his Proposal. Mr. *de Maisencourt* had the Generosity to conceal from me the Persecutions he suffered; but I was informed of them by Mr. *de Berville*. My Apprehensions from the President's Threatenings now revived, and I formed the Resolution of sacrificing my Claims on the Heart of *Maisencourt* to the Desire of seeing him rich, happy, and invested with one of the first Ranks in the Magistracy. What Injustice would there be, said I to myself, in hindering the Advancement of a Man who loves me? Why should I take Advantage of his Weakness? This would be to punish him for having interested himself in my Misfortunes. I ought to love him for himself, and to his Happiness sacrifice my own. Oh

what Advantage could I receive from it, should he condescend to offer me his Hand ! Should I not always reproach myself with having hindered his enjoying the Advantages that were offered him, with having associated him to my Misfortunes, and deprived him of Part of the Respect he before enjoyed ? Let me then endeavour to persuade him to comply with his Uncle's Will ; and if my new Projects, in relation to my Grandfather, fail of Success, I will entreat him to allow me a moderate Pension in the Convent I am going to enter. I will there continue free as long as I live, employ myself only about him, love none but him, and never give to any other Person a Heart which he alone is worthy to possess. Such were the Resolutions I took.

We were then at the finest Part of the Summer ; they therefore resolved, before I entered the Convent, to make me take the Air, in order to dissipate the Melancholy that constantly hung upon my Spirits. We agreed to begin our Walks by *Boulogne Wood*. *Mr. de Berville* was to accompany us the first Day, and *Mrs. de la Salle* was to be with us every Time after : But some unforeseen Affairs prevented *Mr. de Berville's* keeping his Word. *Mr. de Maisontourt* came to inform me of it, and to tell me at the same time, that there was no Necessity for deferring our Walk. I at first expressed great Reluctance against going with him alone ; and my Mind seemed to forebode

bode the Regret I afterwards felt for not having persisted in my Refusal : But the whole of his Behaviour till this Time gave me Confidence, and I yielded to his Persuasions.

Tho' I had but little Gaiety at first, I could not help being soon sensible of the Charms of this Walk. Mr. *de Maisencourt* never appeared so gay and so tender as he did this Day, and never did he appear less dangerous : I could not have thought myself more secure in the Company of a mere Friend. The Solitude of the Place, the Shade, the refreshing Coolness of the Air, the agreeable Verdure, the Singing of Birds, his Discourse, his Presence, all seemed to conspire to give me Confidence and Gaiety. Several Expressions escaped me that were more tender than any thing I had said to him till that Time : Those he uttered had never yet made such an Impression upon me. We walked till I was weary, and at last sat down in the midst of a large level Green, to hear the Linnets, which seemed as if they had agreed to form there a most melodious Concert. " They talk of Love, said Mr. *de Maisencourt*, " and defy you to sing of yours with equal Tenderness." I resolved to prove, that if I could not equal the Sweetness of their Songs, I had at least a Heart as tender as theirs, and began a short Air, which was so expressive, that I had never yet dared to sing it before him. He gave me the greatest Praises ; he gathered wild Flowers, and placed them in my Hair : In exchange I made

him a Nosegay, and tied it with my own Hand, which he kiss'd with Transport. The Emotion he gave me softened him still more, he chose other Flowers, which he said were more beautiful than those I had before, and more capable of forming a finer Contrast with the Whiteness of my Skin; he even pretended that they were worthy to adorn my Bosom, and, without consulting my Will, placed them within my Stays. An Enchantment more strong than Reason itself, doubtless, prevented my perceiving his Boldness. Why is it impossible to efface from my Memory this Proof of my Weakness?

I however was chiding him for his Rashness, when lifting up my Eyes I perceived an Ecclesiastic who was reading, and who turned from us to avoid being a Witness to a Pastime conducted with so little Decency; and my Shame redoubled, when at the Side of an Alley, whither he retired, I saw him again, and knew him to be Mr. *le Franc*. His Presence alone covered me with Confusion, and made me sensible how guilty I was in having behaved with such Imprudence. I fell into a deep Reverie, and my Gaiety was succeeded by a mournful Silence. Virtuous Persons have Reason to fly from me, said I at last, with a deep Sigh, since I was on the Brink of becoming as despicable as a Woman can be. Two Rivulets of Tears ran from my Eyes; Mr. *de Maisoncourt* said whatever he thought capable of restoring my Tranquility, and making me forget his Fault
and

and mine. “ It is not you, Sir, said I, whom I ought to reproach, but myself. I will, however, punish myself for my Weakness, and hope this will be the only one I shall ever have to reproach myself with.”

We got to his Coach, where I sat in the greatest Consternation; and my Despair was redoubled at the Remembrance that Mr. *le Franc* had seen me in close Conversation with a Man in the most retired Part of a Wood. Happy should I have been if this Humiliation, painful as it was, had been the only Punishment Heaven had reserved for me.

I desired Mr. *de Maisencourt* not to go up Stairs with me: He begged to know when he might come to see me, and by how long an Exile I would make him expiate the Crime he had committed. I could make him no Reply, and we parted, each of us filled with an equal Consternation. Alas! I little thought that this Separation was to last for ever.

In vain would I paint the Agitations in which I passed the Night: How many Resolutions did I take, both against the Author of my Uneasiness and myself; and what was my Impatience at finding myself in a State that would not admit of our freely delivering ourselves up to the Indulgence of all our Inclinations! You see, Madam, that I do not seek to impose upon you by the Ostentation of a Virtue, that another would believe, and endeavour to make you believe, infallible. For my
Part.

Part, I confess without Shame, that Flight alone can save us from the Danger which a Woman of Sensibility always runs, with a Man so tenderly beloved, and so worthy of it, as *Mr. de Maisencourt*.

The next Morning I sent *Marianne* to him with a Letter, filled with the most pressing Intreaties, to hasten my Entrance into the Convent. Scarce was she gone, when I received a Card, by which I was informed of the Death of my Sister-in-law's only Son. Heaven, doubtless, punished her for her Injustice, by so sensible a Stroke. I was not ignorant, that the Design of making this Child a rich Heir was the Motive of the Tyranny exercised on *Mr. de Vermont*: His Death therefore gave me the most pleasing Hopes; but how soon were they dissipated! I heard a Coach stop at the Door, I saw the President enter my Apartment: His Presence threw me into a Disorder, which his Discourse only served to augment.

“ I have now, said he, on his entering the
 “ Room, got certain Information of your Con-
 “ duct. ’Till this Moment I have yielded to the
 “ Arguments made use of in your Favour; but I
 “ see that you are not contented with preventing
 “ my Nephew from becoming the most happy,
 “ and the richest Man of the Long Robe; you
 “ deceive him with false Appearances of Vir-
 “ tue. You pretend to tender and sublime Senti-
 “ ments, and yet give yourself up to the basest and
 “ most infamous Actions. My Men found you at

“ a Tavern : Musquetiers resort to see you. This
 “ is too much : I have taken the justest Measures
 “ to punish you for all your Artifices, and to
 “ make you repent of sporting so cruelly with a
 “ worthy Man.” On saying this he threw open
 the Sash, and gave a Signal to a Person who had
 staid behind in the Coach.

I would have justified myself ; but all the No-
 tice he took of me, was to order him who en-
 tered to perform his Duty, and carry me to *St.*
Pelagius.

The Terror with which I was seized was so
 great that I was ready to faint ; when the Presi-
 dent cried, “ Let’s have none of your Grimaces ;
 “ if you do not immediately shew your Obedi-
 “ ence, I will order you to be taken away by the
 “ Guard. Give the Gentleman your Hand, and
 “ get into the Coach. You shall be restored to
 “ your Liberty when my Nephew is married, and
 “ you have consented to the Conditions that shall
 “ be offered you. To prove that I am just in the
 “ midst of my Resentment, I have given the ne-
 “ cessary Orders to prevent your being put among
 “ the unhappy Creatures who resemble you. Mr.
 “ *de Maisencourt* ought not to reproach me with
 “ acting less generously with respect to you, than
 “ he did with respect to your Mother, when she
 “ left me ; I would honour the Object of his
 “ Passion, even when I give her the Chastisement
 “ she deserves.”

I had not the Power to answer a single Word, but suddenly reflecting that I should perhaps never see Mr. *de Maisencourt* again, I begged Leave to enter my Closet, for I imagined that while I was in my Prison, they would take away the Picture of him for whom I was condemned to it; I therefore made haste to put it in my Hair, and to place it in such a Manner as to prevent its being seen. The Hope of preserving, at least the Figure of a Person so dear to me, took up my Thoughts more than my Misfortune, and in some Degree restored the Calmness and Serenity of my Mind. No, said I to myself, I am not unhappy, my Prison will become dear to me while I suffer for him for whom I would give my Life. I then returned, and without speaking to the President, or even looking at him, followed the Officer: However, I was no sooner alone in my Cell, than my Mind became sensible of the full Extent of my Misfortune.

What have I then done so criminal, said I, as to deserve such a severe Chastisement as that I suffer? Is there so great a Crime in loving the most amiable of Men? And is this Crime of so heinous a Nature as to make it necessary for Heaven to punish it with the Horrors and Ignominy of a Prison? What an Example am I for young Persons who find themselves exposed to the same Dangers I have run! What a School for Women, whether they consider the Efforts I have made to deliver myself from the Snares that have surrounded me,

or whether they trace back the Evils I have endured, from the Moment in which I wanted the Resolution to refuse a suspected Assistance !

These gloomy Reflections did not prevent my sometimes fixing my Attention on the Disposition I was then in with respect to Mr. *de Maisencourt*. If they knew, said I, the Resolutions I have formed, they would not think they had a Right to make use of Violence to force me to renounce him ; but I find that I shall lose the Merit even of those Resolutions ; they will not believe that I have been capable of them. In the mean time, added I, looking at his Picture, they are going to marry him ; is it possible for him to cease to love her who has seemed to possess his whole Heart ? Will Wealth render him happy ? Where will he find a Heart like that of *Constantia's* ? What other Woman can know the Value of his, and return all the Affection he deserves ?

The President I found had really given Orders in my Favour ; in this Place, destined for Tears and Repentance, I did not suffer the cruel Treatment those deserve that are shut up for notorious Crimes : I lived separate from them ; but in this Society they are so accustomed to rigorous Proceedings, that I had frequently Cause to lament the Unhappiness of my Fate. I continued to entertain Hopes that Mr. *de Maisencourt* would be able to penetrate into the Mystery they would doubtless make of my Confinement. I myself

strove to find the Means of informing him of it; but the Orders that had been given were so strict, that I soon lost all Hope of surmounting the Obstacles that lay in my Way; for I was afraid, that if any of my Attempts should be discovered, they would occasion my being more closely confined. I therefore resigned myself to the Care of Providence, and endeavoured to rely on the Assistance and Protection of the Supreme Being. I frequently indulged the Satisfaction at looking at the dear Picture I preserved; and in these soft Moments I bedewed it with my Tears, and impressed a thousand Kisses on the senseless Features of him I loved: With what Care did I conceal this precious Treasure from every Eye!

My Prison was rendered less disagreeable by an Acquaintance I made with the Baroness de *Gerville*, whose Retreat some Years ago to *St. Pelagio* has made so much Noise. She knew that the most certain Means of assuaging the Grief of the Unhappy, was to engage them to relate the Subject of their Distress. I informed her of all the Particulars of my Life, and the Reasons that had occasioned my Confinement. My History gave her an Esteem for me; and I desired her in my Turn to inform me of the true Motives that had led her to the Place where I found her.

“ I am not sufficiently sure of my Memory, she
 “ replied, to enter upon so long a Detail: I will,
 “ however,

“ however, satisfy your Curiosity : And as I write
 “ with great Freedom, I will one Day put into
 “ your Hands an exact Account of the true Rea-
 “ sons of an Event, on which the World has
 “ made such false Conjectures.” This Lady kept
 her Word some time after, and as I believe that
 you will be delighted at knowing the Truth of so
 curious an Anecdote, I send you her Memoirs.

My Application was not confined to the keep-
 ing up an Intercourse, from which I received as
 much Improvement as Satisfaction ; but I strove
 to render myself as agreeable to the Superior as
 possible : One Night when I was with her, a Per-
 son came to inform her that a Woman in the last
 Extremity desired to speak to her before she died ;
 and it was added that this Woman edified all
 about her, by her Sentiments of Piety, and all the
 Marks of a true and sincere Repentance.

Whatever bore the Impression of Grief and
 Sadness, had, with respect to me, an invincible
 Attraction ; I therefore desired the Superior to do
 me the Favour to let me accompany her, and she
 granted my Request. The Bed to which we were
 conducted, had no other Light than what pro-
 ceeded from the Lamps in the Hall, and it was
 surrounded by many Persons on their Knees, who
 seemed greatly moved by the Discourse and State
 of the sick Woman. The Superior no sooner en-
 tered than going up to her Bed-side, she asked what
 she would have.

“ Alas”

“ Alas, Madam, said she, in a faint Voice, it is
 “ a Favour that can alone make me receive the
 “ Stroke of Death without Regret. My State
 “ affords you an Example of the Punishments
 “ Heaven reserves for those, who, like me, have
 “ lived a Life of Vice. But I thank God for having
 “ given me Time to see and lament my Errors. I
 “ adore the Goodness that has afflicted me ; I see
 “ without regret my Members successively pe-
 “ rishing, and Death advancing to stop the Source
 “ of Life. There is but one Object that binds
 “ me to the Earth ; but how dear is she to me ! I
 “ have left a Daughter ; God grant that she may
 “ never follow my wretched Example ! Do you,
 “ Madam, inform her of the State in which I die :
 “ Describe the Grief of a Mother that has, with
 “ respect to her, violated all the Duties of Nature,
 “ and who, after having shamefully abandoned
 “ her, has wickedly endeavoured to delude her,
 “ and to lead her into a State of the vilest Depra-
 “ vity : Terrify her, by letting her know into
 “ what a State my Crimes have led me.”

She was unable to proceed. As soon as I heard
 her speak of her Daughter my whole Frame shud-
 der'd. The Sound of her Voice, tho' it was very
 weak, had reached my Heart ; I advanced trem-
 bling : I looked at her with an eager Inquietude :
 I asked her Name. “ O my *Constantia* ! cried she,
 “ at hearing me speak ; does Heaven permit me

“ to see again my Daughter before I expire? But
 “ where do I see her !” I cast myself upon her ; I
 clasped her in my Arms, drowned in Tears : I
 called her a thousand Times my Mother, and
 held her in a close Embrace.

The Superior fearing such Agitations would
 become fatal to her, caused us to be separated, and
 I continued on my Knees by the Side of the Bed,
 with my Face reclined on my Mother’s Hands.
 All were in Tears, all were silent ; my Mother
 alone was heard by her incessant Sighs.

“ I hope, said she at last, after several Times
 “ endeavouring to speak, I hope the Wrath of
 “ Heaven begins to be appeased, since I am per-
 “ mitted to embrace my Child before I die : But
 “ my dear Daughter, how come you by the Know-
 “ ledge of the Place of my Confinement ? Have
 “ you been told that the Abbé’s Family sent me
 “ hither ? Are you still worthy of the Advice I
 “ desired the Superior to give you ? Where is my
 “ Husband ? Can I throw me at his Feet, and im-
 “ plore his Pardon for all the Offences I have
 “ committed against him ? Can I satisfy those
 “ who have been shocked at my Conduct by a
 “ public Repentance ? Make haste to answer my
 “ Questions, for I feel that I have but a Moment
 “ to live.”

My Reply was lost upon her ; scarce had she done
 speaking when her Head became disordered, and
 she

she fell into Convulsions. I hastened to give her every Assistance in my Power. I covered her with my Cloaths. I brought new Heat into her Hands by the Warmth of my own. I held her in my Arms : I would have recalled her to Life, by giving her half of mine.

Vain Efforts ! fruitless Hope ! they perceived that she was no more ; tho' I still endeavoured to assist her. My Affliction was extreme : They forced me from her, and carried me into another Room, where I lay two Hours in a State of Insensibility. The Superior was affected with my Condition ; and since this Event I have received singular Proofs of her Goodness. O how much am I obliged to her ! To her I owe the Honour and Advantage of your Protection. The Eulogiums she frequently made before me, of your Compassion for the Unhappy, emboldened me so far as to desire her to speak to you in my Behalf, and to put you in mind, that I had already been assisted by your Bounty. Happy Moment ! which I doubtless ought to consider as the Period of my Misfortunes.

But permit me, Madam, to entreat that one Favour may be added to what you have made me expect from your Generosity : I make a Request on which my Repose, and perhaps my Virtue depends : Could I have the Courage to make it at another Time ? If you procure me my Liberty, if Heaven suffers me to live to enjoy it, conde-
scend

scend to take upon yourself the Trouble of obliging me to act agreeably to my Principles, and my true Interest. Suffer me not to see a Man for whom you know I have so strong an Inclination : Be so generous as to save me from my own Weakness, for you are sensible how great it is. When a Girl is so unhappy as to have a Heart like mine, she has no other Means of Safety but by Flight ; and I am persuaded, that in this Case the wisest Woman is she who trusts least to her Virtue.

P. S. At the Moment, Madam, when I was going to send you this Part of my Justification, I was taken so dangerously ill, that it was not thought adviseable to hazard any Remedies till I had had the Assistance of a Physician for the Soul. I received this News with the Resignation which everyone ought to feel who is reduced to the State I am in : And indeed, Life has not such Charms for the Unhappy, as to make them dread the Approach of Death : I therefore prevailed on the Superior to send for Mr. *le Franc* : But could I have foreseen, that while deprived of all Consolation, while abandoned by those who might have been dear to me, while dishonoured by a shameful Imprisonment, and languishing under a Disease that appeared mortal, I could possibly find a new Subject for Grief ? This, however, was what I have experienced : I was still afflicted in the most sensible Part.

On

On my giving an Account of my Actions to Mr. *le Franc*, I forgot to reproach myself for what he esteemed most criminal, my Love for Mr. *de Maisencourt*. This Sensation appeared to me so pure, and he who was the Object of it so worthy of Esteem, that I was inclined to consider it rather as a Virtue than a Crime; but he represented it in a very different Light, and absolutely insisted on my sending him his Picture, which I had such a Desire to keep. I had not Courage instantly to make so great a Sacrifice. I desired him to give me Time to come to a Determination. I durst not give you the Particulars of all the Struggles I have had with myself on this Account. It is sufficient that I tell you, after having bathed the Picture with my Tears, I have at length, tho' with the utmost Reluctance, enclosed it in this Packet, which I am going to direct to you in the Presence of Mr. *le Franc*. As it is very probable that I shall not now reap the Advantage of any other Instance of your Goodness, condescend, Madam, to grant me the Favour to restore this Picture to him that gave it me, and to add that of communicating to him these Memoirs. He will see by the Tears with which this Paper has been sprinkled, how much it has cost me to promise never more to love the only Man in the whole World, who, by his excellent Qualities would best justify the Passion I have hitherto felt for him.



E N D.

